INFORMATION TO USERS

This manuscript has been reproduced from the microfilm master. UMI films the text directly from the original or copy submitted. Thus, some thesis and dissertation copies are in typewriter face, while others may be from any type of computer printer.

The quality of this reproduction is dependent upon the quality of the copy submitted. Broken or indistinct print, colored or poor quality illustrations and photographs, print bleedthrough, substandard margins, and improper alignment can adversely affect reproduction.

In the unlikely event that the author did not send UMI a complete manuscript and there are missing pages, these will be noted. Also, if unauthorized copyright material had to be removed, a note will indicate the deletion.

Oversize materials (e.g., maps, drawings, charts) are reproduced by sectioning the original, beginning at the upper left-hand corner and continuing from left to right in equal sections with small overlaps. Each original is also photographed in one exposure and is included in reduced form at the back of the book.

Photographs included in the original manuscript have been reproduced xerographically in this copy. Higher quality 6" x 9" black and white photographic prints are available for any photographs or illustrations appearing in this copy for an additional charge. Contact UMI directly to order.

UMI

A Bell & Howell Information Company
300 North Zeeb Road, Ann Arbor MI 48106-1346 USA
313/761-4700 800/521-0600

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

ROUSSEAU'S MORAL AND POLITICAL PSYCHOLOGY:

"THE NATURAL MAN LIVING IN THE STATE OF SOCIETY"

by

Laurence David Cooper

Department of Political Science
Duke University

Date: 7-2-96

Approved:

Ruth W. Grant, Supervisor

Dissertation submitted in partial fulfillment of the requirements for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy in the Department of Political Science in the Graduate School of Duke University

1996

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

UMI Number: 9704719

Copyright 1996 by
Cooper, Laurence David

All rights reserved.

UMI Microform 9704719
Copyright 1996, by UMI Company. All rights reserved.

This microform edition is protected against unauthorized
copying under Title 17, United States Code.

UMI
300 North Zeeb Road
Ann Arbor, MI 48103

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Copyright by
Laurence David Cooper
1996

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

<u>ABSTRACT</u>

(Political Science)

ROUSSEAU'S MORAL AND POLITICAL PSYCHOLOGY:

"THE NATURAL MAN LIVING IN THE STATE OF SOCIETY"

by

Laurence David Cooper

Department of Political Science
Duke University

Date: 7-2-96

Approved:

Ruth W. Grant, Supervisor

An abstract of a dissertation submitted in partial fulfillment of the requirements for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy in the Department of Political Science in the Graduate School of Duke University

1996

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

ABSTRACT

Rousseau proposed several theoretical solutions to the ills of the human condition. Although they were vastly different from one another, each of these solutions had one thing in common. Each aimed at replicating or recovering man's natural goodness. As wicked and mean as civilized man may be, by nature, according to Rousseau, he is good. Any solution to the ills of civilization, any kind of good life, must therefore take its bearings from nature. But how? What does nature mean for Rousseau? This dissertation presents an interpretation of Rousseau's understanding of nature and its place in his diagnostic and prescriptive thought.

Although nature is the central theme of the dissertation, the question driving it is the question of the good life. Thus the dissertation begins, in Chapter One, by asking what it is that makes a life good for Rousseau. I argue there that the goodness of the good life consists for Rousseau not in happiness or virtue *per se* but rather in the quantitative maximization of the feeling of existence.

The development of all but the most primitive capacities is, by Rousseau's own strict definition, unnatural. Civilization is unnatural in the purest sense. Yet *Emile* depicts the development of what Rousseau nevertheless chooses to call a "natural man living in the

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

state of society," and in his autobiographical writings Rousseau depicts himself as yet another kind of "natural man." Chapter Two is devoted to addressing this paradox. I attempt there to ascertain the criteria of post-state-of-nature naturalness and to illuminate its relation to original, or pure, naturalness.

Chapters Three and Four, which make up the majority of the dissertation, are an analysis of "the natural man in the state of society," the theoretical solution exemplified by the eponymous hero of _Emile_. Chapter Three addresses the process by which civilized naturalness develops out of and upon original naturalness, a process which I call sublimation. Central to my interpretation of this process is a new interpretation of the meaning and role of conscience in Rousseau's thought.

The subject of Chapter Four is self-love. The key to achieving naturalness in civilization is the proper education of self-love -- preventing natural, benign love of self from mutating into fractious pride or vanity. My intention here is to interpret Rousseau's subtle understanding of _amour de soi_ and _amour-propre_ and their respective places in the psychic economy of the civilized natural man.

Chapter Five is an effort at critique. I consider both the promise and the dangers inherent in Rousseau's naturalism.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

TO VICKI

"elle plaît chaque jour davantage"
-- _Emile_ V:410

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

This dissertation has benefitted from the contributions of several people. Ruth Grant supervised the project from its inception and offered constructive advice at every step along the way. I am particularly grateful for her gentle insistence that I spell out some things that needed to be spelled out, and for her unwavering confidence in the value of this undertaking. Christopher Kelly read and responded to each chapter as it was completed. I am grateful for his thoughtful responses to my arguments and for his mastery of Rousseau's corpus, which was my surest check against glaring interpretive error. I am also grateful to Michael Gillespie, whose extensive comments on my initial proposal and on the final draft made this dissertation better than it otherwise would have been, and to Thomas Spragens, from whom I learned much about modern political philosophy. I would also like to acknowledge the generous support of Duke University, without which I might never have begun, let alone completed, this lengthy endeavor. Finally, my thanks to those to whom I owe the most -- to my parents, Hyman and Ann Cooper, for their support and confidence throughout the years of my education, and to my wife Vicki, for more things than I can count and more than she can imagine.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

CONTENTS

ABBREVIATIONS...ix

PREFACE...xi

INTRODUCTION: ROUSSEAU AND THE QUESTION OF THE GOOD LIFE.....................................1

Rousseau, Nature, and History........................7

The Plan of This Study..............................21

1. THE GOODNESS OF ALL GOOD LIVES.....................30

Beyond Happiness, or What Makes the Good Life Good...34

The Two Components of the Good Life................54

2. NATURE AND HUMAN NATURE, PART I: WHAT IS NATURAL?.....69

The Fixedness of Man's "Present Nature"............76

Charting the Human Landscape, I: Two Chasms -- One Bridgeable, the Other Not.......................89

Charting the Human Landsape, II: Five Human Types, Three Natural Men, One Civilized Savage............96

"What is Natural in the Savage State" and "What is Natural in the Civil State"....................112

3. NATURE AND HUMAN NATURE, PART II: EMILE, OR THE NATURALIZATION OF HUMAN NATURE................124

Between Aristotle and Hobbes, Between Plato and Freud: A Word on Rousseau's Distinctiveness.......128

Sublimation in Rousseau: Conscience as Alchemist..149

What Else is Natural, and Why.....................194

4. THE PROBLEM OF SELF-LOVE...........................214

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

I. The Stakes....................................222
A. *Amour-propre*'s Inevitability.................223
B. *Amour-propre*'s Ambiguity.....................228
C. *Amour-propre*'s Influence on Character and Behavior..................................244
II. What *Amour-propre* is and How It Arises........257
A. Answers and Rebuttals: An Attempt at Dialectic....................................258
B. The Birth of *Amour-propre*....................286
C. How Much *Amour-propre*, and What Kind? Gentleness versus Cruelty, Pride versus Vanity...............................304
III. Beyond *Amour-propre*? Prospects and Possibilities................................327
5. CRITICAL REFLECTIONS ON ROUSSEAU'S NATURALISM........348
A Return to Wholeness...........................353
The Reality of Natural Goodness: What Science Has to Say.....................................358
The Perils of Rousseau's Naturalism -- Some Concluding Reflections...........................369
REFERENCES...402

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

ABBREVIATIONS

d'Alembert	Letter to M. d'Alembert on the Theater. Trans. Allan Bloom. In Politics and the Arts. Ithaca, New York: Cornell University Press, Agora Editions, 1968.
Beaumont	Jean-Jacques Rousseau citoyen de Genève à Christophe de Beaumont, archeveque de Paris. In Oeuvres complètes, vol. IV.
Bordes	Preface of a Second Letter to Bordes. In The First and Second Discourses Together with the Replies to Critics and Essay on the Origin of Languages. Trans. and ed. Victor Gourevitch. New York: Harper & Row, 1990.
CG	Correspondence generale de J.J. Rousseau. Ed. Th. Dufour and P.P. Plan, 24 vols. Paris: Armand Colin, 1924-34.
Confessions	The Confessions of Jean-Jacques Rousseau. Trans. A.S.B. Glover. New York: The Heritage Press, 1955.
Corsica	Constitutional Project for Corsica. In Political Writings. Trans. and ed. Frederick Watkins. Madison, Wisconsin: The University of Wisconsin Press, 1986.
Dialogues	Rousseau, Judge of Jean-Jacques: Dialogues. In The Collected Writings of Rousseau, vol. 1. Ed. Roger D. Masters and Christopher Kelly. Trans. Judith R. Bush, Christopher Kelly and Roger D. Masters. Hanover, New Hampshire: University Press of New England, 1990.
Emile	Emile, or on Education. Trans. Allan Bloom. New York: Basic Books, 1979.
FD	First Discourse. In The First and Second Discourses. Trans. Roger D. and Judith R. Masters. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1964.
Fragments	Fragments politiques. In Oeuvres completes, vol. III.
Julie	La Nouvelle Heloise. Julie, or the New Eloise. Trans. Judith H. McDowell. University Park, Pennsylvania: The Pennsylvania State University Press, 1968.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Languages — Essay on the Origin of Languages. In The First and Second Discourses Together with the Replies to Critics and Essay on the Origin of Languages. Trans. Victor Gourevitch. New York: Harper & Row, 1986.

Last Reply — Last Reply by J.-J. Rousseau of Geneva [to Bordes]. In The First and Second Discourses Together with the Replies to Critics and Essay on the Origin of Languages. Trans. and ed. Victor Gourevitch. New York: Harper & Row, 1990.

LM — Lettres morales. In Oeuvres complètes, vol. IV.

Narcissus — Preface to Narcissus. In The First and Second Discourses Together with the Replies to Critics and Essay on on the Origin of Languages. Trans. and ed. Victor Gourevitch. New York: Harper & Row, 1990.

OC — Oeuvres complètes, 4 vols. Paris: Gallimard, Bibliotheque de la Pleiade, 1959-69.

PE — Discourse on Political Economy. In On the Social Contract with Geneva Manuscript and Political Economy. Trans. Judith R. Masters. Ed. Roger D. Masters. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1978.

Reveries — Reveries of the Solitary Walker. Trans. Charles E. Butterworth. Indianapolis: Hackett Publishing Company, 1992.

SC — On the Social Contract. In On the Social Contract with Geneva Manuscript and Political Economy. Trans. Judith R. Masters. Ed. Roger D. Masters. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1978.

SD — Second Discourse. In The First and Second Discourses. Trans. Roger D. and Judith R. Masters. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1964.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

PREFACE

The philosophy of Jean-Jacques Rousseau is famous -- some would say infamous -- for its apparent contradictions. At some places it appears radically individualistic; at others, just as radically collectivist. In some works Rousseau rhapsodizes about nature or love and emerges as a founder of Romanticism, while in others he speaks the harder language of austere virtue and so seems a modern Stoic. And there are other paradoxes as well. Indeed, so manifold and so pronounced are these contradictions that they have led to an astounding array of conflicting interpretations. Perhaps no other philosophic corpus -- and almost certainly no other corpus as systematically coherent as Rousseau's[1] -- has been subject to so many contrary readings. Rousseau has been variously tagged as a revolutionary, a conservative, a proto-totalitarian and a

---

1. Rousseau insisted that his thought was a systematic whole whose many contradictions are resolvable. It should be noted at the outset that I accept his claim, even if many others do not. The most convincing argument for the truth of Rousseau's claim is made by Arthur M. Melzer in <u>The Natural Goodness of Man: On the System of Rousseau's Thought</u> (Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1990). It is my hope that the present work will shed further light on the truth and meaning of Rousseau's claim.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

progressive2 -- and that only covers his political thought. (The psychological, anthropological and aesthetic aspects of his thought are equally subtle and have given rise to their own interpretive controversies.)

But if the most problematic of Rousseau's paradoxes stem from the conflicting character of his solutions, the most significant of them is found in his basic diagnosis of

---

2. Among those who have depicted Rousseau as a revolutionary are Hillaire Belloc, in The French Revolution (London: Oxford University Press, 1911), pp. 7, 14-21; Henry Sumner Maine, in Ancient Law (London: Everyman's Library, J.M. Dent, 1917), pp. 84-85; and Hippolyte A. Taine, in Les origines de la France contemporaine: L'ancien regime (Paris: Libraire Hachette, 1876), pp. 351-58. Most Rousseau scholars, however, have come to agree that, whatever his actual influence on the French Revolution, Rousseau in fact opposed revolution -- a view that goes back as far as Edmund Burke; see Reflections on the Revolution in France (London: J.M. Dent, 1910), p. 167. Rousseau's opposition to revolution is but one position that qualifies as conservative. For others, and for a more general depiction of Rousseau as a conservative, see Alfred Cobban, Rousseau and the Modern State (London: Allen & Unwin, 1934), pp. 228-35, and Annie Osborn, Rousseau and Burke (New York: Russell & Russell, 1940). The argument that Rousseau's thought anticipates modern totalitarianism has been made by Jacob L. Talmon in The Rise of Totalitarian Democracy (New York: Frederick A. Praeger, 1952); see pp. 41-49. Also see Lester G. Crocker, Rousseau's Social Contract: An Interpretive Essay (Cleveland: Case Western Reserve University Press, 1968), pp. 163-91. And for interpretations of Rousseau as progressive or liberal, see, for example, John W. Chapman, Rousseau: Totalitarian or Liberal? (New York: AMS Press, 1956), p. 106; Ronald Grimsley, The Philosophy of Rousseau (London: Oxford University Press, 1973), pp. 163-64; and Charles W. Hendel, Jean-Jacques Rousseau: Moralist, vol. I (Indianapolis: Bobbs-Merrill, 1934), pp. 188-89. For a sense of the breadth and persistence of this interpretive controversy, see Jean-Jacques Rousseau: Authoritarian Libertarian?, ed. Guy H. Dodge (Lexington, Massachusetts: D.C. Heath and Company, 1971).

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

the human condition. The most significant paradox in Rousseau's work is the contrast between his exculpatory claim that man is naturally good and his damning insistence that man is wicked and mean. Few have argued *either* side of this paradox as strenuously as Rousseau, let alone both sides. The significance of this paradox has little to do with the difficulty it presents to Rousseau's readers. Indeed, as veteran readers of Rousseau know, the paradox is not all that difficult to resolve, for what is exculpated and what is indicted are two separate things -- namely, nature and man, respectively. What is exculpated by the claim of natural goodness is not man, but rather nature. It is nature that is good. To say that man by nature is good is to say that man *was* good while he remained natural. Today, no longer natural, he is corrupt and corrupting of all that he touches. As Rousseau puts it at the start of Book I of *Emile*, "Everything is good as it leaves the hands of the Author of things; everything degenerates in the hands of man."(37) Among the things that have degenerated in the hands of man, he explains, is man himself.

Rather, the contrast between natural goodness and human degradation is so significant because in it is contained the whole grim logic of man's lot as Rousseau sees it. That logic might be expressed as follows: Man is sorely in need of redemption, yet the very corruption that has put him in such dire need prevents him from

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

successfully developing a solution. An attempt at a solution, being of his own making, would surely fail: "everything degenerates in the hands of man." Or as Rousseau puts it in the Second Discourse, "the vices that make social institutions necessary are the same ones that make their abuse inevitable."(172-73) Humanity, it would seem, is hopelessly lost, its vision so blurred by corruption that it can never hope to find its way out of the morass in which it has placed itself.

But perhaps things are not quite as bleak as this logic would suggest. After all, man may be fallen, but nature is not -- indeed, it is wholly good. If we could discover a way to be guided by nature, we just might find a road out of our present misery. Surely whatever hope we have, if any, lies in nature.

And so it does, except that there are two problems. The first problem, a practical problem, is that man would seem bound to foul whatever solution nature might offer up to him. It is hard to imagine that he who causes everything he touches to degenerate would not botch this too, especially given that he failed to hew to nature's way the first time. This is no small difficulty, though perhaps we may be granted license for a certain optimism nonetheless: perhaps by adopting a nature-based solution man would be returning to nature, at least in part, and so

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

would cease to cause everything he touches to degenerate. Perhaps, if he were to follow a path laid out by nature, he could avoid the effects of his blurred vision and find his way back to health; perhaps he could even find his way _up_, to a new healthfulness. True, he strayed from nature once before, but that was before he had fully developed his reason -- and before anyone had been able to explain what is at stake and what nature really is, as Rousseau now has done.

To the second problem, however, there is no such easily imagined solution. That problem is as forbidding as it is simple: Nature, as Rousseau conceives it, is not teleological. It does not comprehend ends. Consequently, it does not prescribe any particular way of life for human beings once they have departed from their original state. In short, it lays out no path. To be sure, it offers certain consolations. Some are able to admire nature's harmony and take a certain joy in doing so.[3] And the wise among us can even find a measure of freedom through studying nature: they can recognize the unnaturalness of certain passions and liberate themselves, at least partly, from their stranglehold.[4] But these are only palliatives, not solutions. As Rousseau sees it, no one has yet found in nature a comprehensive solution to the human problem. No one has been able to derive from that pure source a prescription for impure humanity.[5]

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

No one, that is, prior to himself. For this is exactly what Rousseau purports to have done. He offers a

---

3. Rousseau believed that modern men and women, though permeated by unnatural tastes and impulses, could still appreciate at least some of nature's beauty. He expected that readers would respond to his evocative descriptions of natural beauty, and he was not mistaken to do so. Indeed, he seems to have been a major force in inspiring a new sensibility in France and beyond. Toward the end of his life and continuing after his death, a new page was turned in European cultural history. The literary classes began to discover the beauty of the countryside, the charm of rustic life and the voluptuous pleasure of freely expressing one's feelings. Pristine nature, once lightly regarded, came to mean something good and pure. And Rousseau, the man of nature, came to be hailed as a prophet. For a fascinating and succinct discussion of Rousseau's place in this new cultural regime, see Simon Schama, Citizens: A Chronicle of the French Revolution (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1989), pp. 150-62.

---

4. Rousseau allows that "true philosophers," motivated in part by a love of order, can free themselves from many illusions and unnatural passions. In this they maintain a closer proximity to nature than either false philosophers, who are motivated merely by the desire for distinction, or ordinary individuals. But even these true philosophers, of whom Socrates would seem to have been the truest of all, cannot free themselves totally from unnaturalness. Though motivated in part by the love of order and the dispassionate love of truth, they are also motivated by pride: they take pleasure in comparing themselves to others. And while their pride is more natural than the vanity that motivates most human activity and all false philosophy, it is still unnatural and hence an infringement of natural freedom. For Rousseau's praise of true philosophers, see Narcissus, 102-107, and FD, 63. For more on Rousseau's estimation of Socrates, see Chapter Four, pages 241-42, below. Also see Julie IV-7:293-94, in which Wolmar is presented as a true philosopher.

---

5. Others, of course, such as Aristotle, had claimed to derive ethical and political principles from nature. But since their understanding of nature was teleological, their prescriptions are rejected by Rousseau as invalid. For more on the contrast between Rousseau's understanding of nature and Aristotle's, see Chapter Three, pages 124-39, below.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

broad range of prescriptive thought, and there is no part of that thought that does not in some essential way take its bearings from nature. Much -- indeed, most -- of his prescriptive thought is not offered for direct, practical use (he would certainly challenge our self-appropriated license for optimism)6, but he insists on its theoretical validity and he bases his claim for that validity on the grounds that his "prescriptions" would lead to the replication of natural goodness. Although nature is non-teleological and thus would seem to tell us little about how we ought to live once we have left our original state, Rousseau coaxes some rather substantial answers from it after all. How he does so, and what these answers are, is the essential subject of this study.

My purpose in this study is twofold. First, through an exploration of his treatment of nature, I hope to improve our general understanding of Rousseau's thought. Although nearly all readers would agree that nature holds a central place among Rousseau's ideas, there is confusion as to what nature actually means for Rousseau, and there is considerable disagreement over the role it plays in his thought. My intent is to clarify Rousseau's meaning and to establish the role -- as I see it, the preeminent role --

6. Regarding Rousseau's practical intention, see Melzer, pp. 252-82.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

that nature plays, not only in his diagnostic but also in his constructive or prescriptive thought. I shall offer a new interpretation, one which differs significantly from those expounded by other scholars. The focus of Rousseau's thought about nature is the soul: it is on the basis of their inner state that individuals are judged to be natural or unnatural. Yet if naturalness is in the first instance a psychological notion, it nevertheless has enormous political implications. Nature is the source of all of Rousseau's moral and political standards. Thus my inquiry, if successful, can only lead to a more complete understanding of Rousseau's political thought.

My second purpose goes beyond Rousseau scholarship *per se* and concerns one of the larger issues of political philosophy. Rousseau presents us with an opportunity to consider whether it is possible to derive moral and political standards from a non-teleological understanding of nature -- and, if it is possible, with what effects.

Early modern philosophers, including political philosophers such as Hobbes, repudiated classical teleology and adopted a rather low understanding of what is natural to human beings. Instead of referring to virtue and self-perfection, as it had for Aristotle, nature now came to refer, most of all, to the desire for self-preservation. The natural ceased to be a distant and difficult end toward which to strive and became instead a firm and accessible

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

base on which to build. And it _was_ built upon, not only in theory but also, to a significant extent, in practice. A new social order began to emerge in Europe, an order based on the theories of liberal (and proto-liberal) figures such as Locke and Hobbes. Whatever the differences between them, these theories were constructed upon a shared insight: a successful political and social order, it was believed, must be built upon and must reinforce the desire for self-preservation, for no other passion can be enlisted so reliably and effectively into the service of peace and security. In accordance with this insight, liberal theory and a newly emerging liberal politics validated the pursuit of rational self-interest and encouraged the pursuit of comfortable self-preservation; they promoted commerce and commerce-friendly virtues and so produced a new world.

Although he sympathized with much of the motivation behind liberal political philosophy (e.g., the desire to tame religious fanaticism and aristocratic vainglory), Rousseau detested this new world. He saw in its ethos a prod toward selfishness and exploitation and an undermining of all but the coldest and most cruel of social bonds. In place of fanaticism it put complaceny; in place of vainglory, pettiness of soul. In short, he saw the world produced by modern politics, the world whose leading human type was the bourgeois, as a further, disastrous step away from natural goodness. And he recognized that this step

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

had its source in the modern reconceptualization of nature. As bad as the old world may have been, at least it had believed in the naturalness of the sublime. The new world, shorn of this faith, was running headlong, even eagerly, into degradation -- and it would continue to do so unless it found a way to believe once more in the naturalness of the sublime.

In _Emile_ and elsewhere, Rousseau sets out to solve this problem. He does so by articulating an original, dual-level understanding of nature. At one level Rousseau actually extends the modern tendency to truncate the realm of the natural. In the _Second Discourse_ he defines nature in such a way as to deny the naturalness of virtually every characteristic that we customarily regard as distinctively human. Only the most primitive, submoral aspects of our being are held to be natural. All the rest -- not only sublimity, but also language, reason, sociability and sensibility -- are held to be unnatural. But at another level Rousseau vastly _enlarges_ the compass of nature, and enlarges it "vertically," as it were. He introduces a distinction between "what is natural in the savage state" and "what is natural in the civil state." And while "what is natural in the savage state" is limited to the primitive, to the merely physical, "what is natural in the civil state," it turns out, comprehends the very highest human capacities and possibilities. Few human beings are

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

as sublime or as highly developed -- mentally, morally, aesthetically and spiritually -- as either Emile or the solitary dreamer of the autobiographical writings, and both of these figures are explicitly presented as "natural men." Clearly nature has once again been redefined. With his dual-level conception, Rousseau has found a way to assert the naturalness of the sublime even while remaining true to the modern scientific naturalism that had denied the naturalness of the sublime.

And yet -- even if Rousseau radically redefines nature, he still does not return to a teleological understanding of it. His acceptance of modern scientific naturalism prevents him from returning to anything like an Aristotelian conception of nature. Even if nature yields moral and political standards, it does not specify a single end for civilized man. Even if it once again comprehends the sublime, it does not prescribe any particular way of life. The prescribing is left for the philosopher, for Rousseau.

When nature was thought to be teleological, the job of the moral and political philosopher was to investigate it. Nature would yield substantial answers in response to interrogation, or so it was thought. When nature has been discovered not to be teleological, however, the philosopher who wishes to find in it the ground for a noble human type must do more than interrogate. He must be more creative.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Rather than expect answers to his questions, he must develop proposals of his own and then test them against nature. Nature remains the final arbiter, but it merely nods, as it were, rather than speaks. No longer a source of positive guidance, it is at most a touchstone.

Doubtless this complicates the philosophic enterprise. Those who would base a high human type and an understanding of the good life on a non-teleological conception of nature proceed at a serious disadvantage compared to their teleologically-minded predecessors. But at least that disadvantage isn't fatal -- so, at least, Rousseau purports to show. And for a world which seeks a moral and political lodestar but which largely continues to reject classical teleology, any disadvantage that is less than fatal ought to be tolerable. And any philosophic corpus which makes a serious claim to have surmounted this obstacle ought to be given considerable attention.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

INTRODUCTION:

ROUSSEAU AND THE QUESTION OF THE GOOD LIFE

What is the best way of life? What ends should one pursue, and how should one pursue them?

One who would put the question of the good life to Rousseau must be prepared for a peculiar response. For one thing, Rousseau endorses not one but rather three very different kinds of lives. Sometimes he praises the life of the true citizen, at other times the life of what he calls "the natural man in the state of society," and at still other times the life of solitary reverie and contemplation. Other philosophers, to be sure, had suggested that different ways of life are indicated for different individuals. But only with Rousseau does the notion arise that there is more than one valid substantive ideal. Unlike any of his predecessors, Rousseau proposes that there are several valid goals for man, several divergent but equally valid paths, and not just different degrees of realizing the same goal.

Consider, by contrast, the Socratic tradition. Certainly the members of that tradition did not advise the same sort of life for everyone. The Socratic tradition saw the philosophic life, which it held to be the highest and the most human of lives, as the province of the few. The majority was seen as unfit for that best but most demanding

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

of lives. Nevertheless all individuals would flourish to the extent that they could partake of the single good for man, namely, reason. All ways of life were to be measured by the extent to which they partook of this good. And the different ways of life prescribed for different individuals (on the basis of different dispositions and capacities) could be seen as occupying different places on a single scale defined by that single good. The philosophic life was held to be the purest form of the life of reason and hence the best life, but other ways of life, including the political life and even a life lived in accordance with good laws, could also partake of reason and hence could also be fulfilling, even if only to a lesser degree. Rousseau, on the other hand, allows for three different scales defined by three different substantive goods. The exemplary citizen, "the natural man in the state of society," and the solitary dreamer exemplify three highly divergent but equally valid versions of the good life; they stand atop separate but equally valid scales. For reasons that will later become clear, none of these ideals lies within the practical reach of modern men and women. But that counts little against the fundamental point. For Rousseau human nature is such that any one of three very different ways of life, defined by three very different substantive goods, can lead to its fulfillment.

But the multiplicity of good lives is only one factor

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

complicating Rousseau's answer to the question of the good life. Another factor is that he answers the question only indirectly. Although he does dispense a variety of specific practical advice, ranging from breast feeding (a good thing) to urban life (a very bad thing), he never proposes either a code of conduct or a set of principles of action or even a catalogue of virtues. He has written no Ethics. Rather than provide guidance for conduct, he addresses the sources of good conduct -- which is to say, the circumstances which favor the development of a healthy soul. This holds true for each of the three varieties of the good life. Instead of a offering a guide to good citizenship, he articulates the principles and institutions of a worthy republic, on the apparent premise that it is only the formation of such a republic that can lead to good citizenship. Without the right laws and institutions, no set of principles or rules and no amount of exhortation will suffice to produce good citizens. Instead of offering a set of principles for those who would be natural men in the state of society, he describes and explains the education of such a man; he writes an Emile rather than an Ethics, on the premise that the only way to achieve a high degree of naturalness amid civilization is to be reared in a very particular way. Once corrupt passions have taken root in the soul, there is little that can be done to subdue them; only the prevention that comes with good

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

education can do much good.[1] And instead of detailing the steps needed to become capable of enjoying solitary reverie, he describes the idiosyncratic development of the one person whom he knows to have achieved that end, namely, himself. And he goes to great lengths to underscore his uniqueness and hence, by implication, the improbability of anyone's following that path after him. It would be incorrect to characterize Rousseau as a determinist, but he clearly believes that character is destiny and that character is formed, for the most part irreversibly, by social, political, and even material circumstances.[2]

Rousseau does not directly answer the question of how one should live. Instead, he addresses the question of what one should be and how one might become what one should be. The focus of his moral and political thought is the education of the soul. Even when he gives practical advice for individual use, as, for example, in the Lettres morales, his emphasis is on achieving the right setting

---

1. The Lettres morales represent a partial, but only a partial, exception to this statement. By following the advice given in the Lettres, one can take a few steps toward naturalness. But one will still fall far short of Emile's naturalness. And even those steps have more to do with where to place oneself than with what to do.

2. Regarding the moral effects of material circumstances, Rousseau at one time planned to write an entire book on the subject, in which he would address the influence of specific forces -- climate, diet, light, noise, etc. -- on character. The book was to have been called "La Morale Sensitive, ou le Materialisme du Sage." The project is discussed at Confessions IX:390-9.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

rather than on specific rules or principles of conduct. Parts of the Lettres do indeed read like a handbook, but a handbook for enjoying rustic simplicity rather than what we might normally expect from "moral letters."

For these reasons, and for others, too, putting the question of the good life to Rousseau is a complicated affair.3 Nevertheless it is precisely this question that drives the following inquiry. The chapters that follow present an interpretation of Rousseau's thought on the question of the good life. Because Rousseau's thought on this question is tripartite, my interpretation takes account of all three versions of the good life. (My emphasis, however, is on the life of "the natural man in the state of society," the version exemplified by Emile, since that version is by far the most relevant to most modern men and women.4) And because Rousseau's treatment of this question concentrates on character or the soul, so does my interpretation.

To judge from the hundreds of serious studies of the philosopher's life and works, the world would not seem to lack for books on Rousseau.5 Yet for all the scholarly attention, Rousseau's thinking on the problem of the good life -- that is, his thinking on the development of the healthy soul -- has been only minimally explored. There is surprisingly little scholarly comment on this all-important

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

3. Among the other factors that make Rousseau's answer to the question of the good life a complicated one is the unsystematic way in which he presents his philosophic system. Not only does he seem to contradict himself by proposing one solution in one work and another in another work, he seems to criticize in one work the solution put forth in another. For example, his severe critique of social man as such in the individualistic and "naturalistic" Second Discourse would seem to include, by implication, the austere ancient republics which he admires and which he elsewhere praises.

4. That "the natural man in the state of society" is the most relevant of Rousseau's three theoretical ideals to modern men and women can be confirmed by process of elimination. To be a citizen of the type Rousseau admires is simply not possible any longer: it would require political institutions of a sort that are not found in the world of large, commercially oriented nation states. Nor is it possible for ordinary people to become solitary dreamers of the sort described in the Reveries: to be such a person would require an extremely unlikely combination of circumstances and natural genius. Which leaves "the natural man in the state of society," or Emile. Emile, too, represents what for all practical purposes is an unattainable ideal. But at least one can take some steps in Emile's direction. For example, one can retreat from urban life into rustic simplicity; and one can incorporate at least some of the tutor's methods into one's own child-rearing (e.g., giving one's child significant freedom, and avoiding displays of arbitrary willfulness). Emile is a philosophic treatise and not an educational manual: "it is a new system of education the plan of which I present for the study of the wise and not a method for fathers and mothers."(OC III:783) Nevertheless it is a treatise from which one might derive significant practical use.

5. "Another book on Jean-Jacques Rousseau?" So writes Roger Masters at the beginning of his excellent exegetical study, The Political Philosophy of Rousseau, in . . . 1968. (Princeton: Princeton University Press.) If it was an appropriate question then, how much more so now, in light of the many additional studies that have appeared since that time. For a sense of the number of secondary studies and their variety of approaches, see the bibliographical surveys in Asher Horowitz, Rousseau, Nature, and History (Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1987), pp. 3-26, and Peter Gay's "Introduction" to Ernst Cassirer, The Question of Jean-Jacques Rousseau (Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1954), pp. 17-24.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

question. For that matter, there is surprisingly little commentary on Emile, which, besides being the work in which Rousseau's understanding of the soul is most fully related, is also the one Rousseau considered "his greatest and best book."(Dialogues I:23) (A recent bibliography lists only nine works on Emile, compared to forty-two on the Social Contract and thirty-two on the Discourses.6) What's more, much of what has been written on this subject, most notably on the matter of nature, has been marred by serious misunderstanding. To correct this misunderstanding would be a step toward a fuller and a more useful understanding of Rousseau.

ROUSSEAU, NATURE, AND HISTORY

Rousseau's high regard for nature is obvious and widely acknowledged. Less obvious, though, is his view of nature's relevance to civilized men and women. What place does nature have, and what place can it have, in the lives of those who long ago departed the state of nature for artificial civilization? Is there any part of us, apart from our bodies and their impulses, that either is or can

6. The bibliography appears in N.J.H. Dent, A Rousseau Dictionary (Cambridge, Massachusetts: Blackwell Publishers, 1992), pp. 261-74. At Dialogues III:213, "the Frenchman" comments that Emile "is much read, little understood, and ill-appreciated." One thing at least has changed: it is no longer much read.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

be natural? Does the moral realm have any basis in nature -- is it possible to partake of natural goodness in social life -- or has every acquisition since the departure from the state of nature been but another layer of unnaturalness, alienating us that much more from our natural core?

Broadly speaking, scholarly writings on this question have expressed one of three interpretive tendencies. One tendency is to see in Rousseau's depiction of conscience evidence that nature does indeed play a role in the moral realm. At various places in his work, Rousseau seems to present conscience as a natural phenomenon. More than once he calls it the voice of nature.[7] From this some interpreters have concluded that the departure from the state of nature did not amount to a total alienation from nature. Far from it: Civilized man may not be as simply or as perfectly natural as his savage ancestor -- unlike the savage, he has unnatural passions and temptations -- but he does have a natural core. What's more, that core is larger than the savage's, for the savage lacked conscience: conscience only develops in those in whom reason and sociality have developed. Rousseau makes strong claims for conscience. Conscience, he says, is universal and constant. It is always and everywhere the same,

---

7. Rousseau's depiction of conscience is addressed in Chapter Three, below.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

independent of historic epoch and social contingency. Thus nature does indeed extend into the social and moral realm. If we have become alienated from nature, that is because we have ceased to listen to its timid voice, and not because it is absent or mute.8

It is in the "Profession of Faith of the Savoyard Vicar" (which appears in Book IV of Emile) and in the Lettres morales that most of these claims about conscience appear. Not surprisingly, this first interpretive tendency, the tendency to see conscience as evidence that nature extends into the moral realm, is popular among those who read the Profession and the Lettres as sincere statements of Rousseau's own views.9 Not everyone reads them that way, however, and those who do not are apt to express one of the other two interpretive tendencies.

Before moving on to those other interpretations, however, we must take note of a special case. One of the

---

8. Those who subscribe to this interpretation of conscience and nature tend not to formulate it in just these terms. Their emphasis is normally on the particular characteristics of conscience rather than on its natural status. See, for example, N.J.H. Dent, Rousseau: An Introduction to his Psychological, Social and Political Theory (New York: Basil Blackwell, Inc., 1989); Maurice Cranston, The Noble Savage: Jean-Jacques Rousseau, 1754-1762 (Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1991); and Judith Shklar, Men and Citizens: A Study of Rousseau's Social Theory (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1969).

9. Shklar, for example, takes the Lettres morales to be "the clearest and most reliable account of Rousseau's real beliefs." See pp. 229-30; also see pp. 37-38.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

more powerful interpretations of Rousseau's work goes by the description of neo-Kantian. As part of their emphasis on the moral rationalism they find in Rousseau (a rationalism which is thought to prefigure Kant's), neo-Kantian interpreters have emphasized not only the universality and constancy of conscience, but also its rationality, its force and its comprehensiveness -- that is, its ability to serve as a just moral arbiter and behavioral guide. They see in Rousseau's conscience the source of the individual's moral autonomy. Conscience confers dignity on man and allows him to make meaningful use of his freedom. Neo-Kantian interpreters emphasize those places in Rousseau's work where he himself emphasizes the gains conferred by becoming social. In all this the neo-Kantians might rightly be seen as expressing the interpretive tendency described above -- except for one thing: While they do indeed emphasize the leading role of conscience in moral life and while they do see conscience as universal, constant and even autonomous, they do not recognize conscience as a part or expression of nature. For them, as for Kant, nature refers only to the bodily and the primitive, to the subrational realm of impulse and inclination. Conscience may be universal, but since it requires reason in order to be operative, it is not natural. Nature, in this usage, is that which is _overcome_ by reason and conscience. Thus, while the work done by

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

these interpreters can be seen as being allied to the interpretive tendency I have described, it certainly cannot be said simply to share it.10

The second interpretive tendency stands in stark opposition to the first. An historicist interpretation has arisen according to which Rousseau holds nature to be only minimally important to civilized man. That which is natural in man is thought either to have been far outweighed by the artificial acquisitions of history or, which comes to much the same thing, to have been reworked or reconstituted by the processes of history. While in the state of nature man was natural. In leaving that state, he alienated himself from nature. To be sure, nature persists within him, but it persists only in his physical being. Everything moral, everything that has been acquired -- including conscience -- is a product of history and hence is not natural. What distinguishes this view from the neo-Kantian interpretation is that even conscience and

---

10. For the neo-Kantian interpretation, see Ernst Cassirer, The Question of Jean-Jacques Rousseau, trans. Peter Gay (New York: Columbia University Press, 1954), and Rousseau, Kant and Goethe, trans. James Gutmann et. al. (New York: Harper & Row, 1963); Georges Gurvitch, L'idee du droit social. Notion et systeme du droit social. Histoire doctrinal depuis le XVIIe siècle jusqua'a la fin du XIXe siecle (Paris: Libraire du Receuil Sirey, 1932); and Andrew Levine, The Politics of Autonomy: A Kantian Reading of Rousseau's Social Contract (Amherst: The University of Massachusetts Press, 1976). This interpretation is also partly shared by Robert Derathe, in Le Rationalisme de Jean-Jacques Rousseau (Paris: Presses Universitaires de France, 1948).

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

principles of moral and political right are held to be historically and socially determined. Rousseau may call conscience the voice of nature, but what conscience actually says varies over time and across cultures according to prevailing socio-economic conditions. Nature counts, but History counts more. The most powerful exponent of this interpretation, in my view, is Asher Horowitz. Horowitz faults certain Marxist critics for not recognizing that Rousseau's historicism anticipates their own and thus could be useful to them, and he offers up his own historicist interpretation and appreciation, which he describes as a "Marcusean reading of Rousseau."[11]

The first interpretive tendency might fairly be called ahistoricist. The significance of history is not altogether denied, but nature, largely in the form of conscience, is seen as a vital, unchanging force within civilized man. (The most important effect of history, on this view, was the awakening of ahistorical conscience.)

---

11. See Rousseau, Nature, and History, p. 4; also see pp. 6-7 and 30-35. For Horowitz's view that conscience is "dependent in its content . . . on the history of society," see pp. 135-65, and especially pp. 140-42. Others who have offered radically historicist readings of Rousseau are Lionel Gossman, in "Time and History in Rousseau," Studies on Voltaire and the Eighteenth Century, 30, 1964, pp. 311-49; David Cameron, in The Social Thought of Rousseau and Burke (London: Weidenfeld and Nicolson, 1973); and Stephen Ellenburg, in Rousseau's Political Philosophy: An Interpretation from Within (Ithaca: Cornell University Press, 1976). These readings do not all speak to the historicity of conscience, but they do speak to the historicity and social-constructedness of human nature in general.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Through conscience, nature provides the standard by which to make moral determinations. The second interpretative tendency, by contrast, is highly historicist. Nature is the realm of necessity and hence has no moral content. Psychically, it is at most a kind of raw material. What we do with that material -- how we think, how we live our lives -- is a question which is settled within the moral realm, or the realm of freedom. Seen thus, nature certainly is not, nor does it yield, the standard by which to make moral or political decisions. Rousseau is seen as a step on the road to German Idealism, for which Reason and Freedom, rather than nature, serve as moral and political standards.

Finally, between those who emphasize nature over history and those who emphasize history over nature, there is a group of scholars who grant serious weight to both and who thus express a third interpretive tendency. Largely on the basis of the Second Discourse, these interpreters, like the historicist interpreters, recognize that Rousseau holds a very "low" conception of nature, a conception which excludes nearly everything human and which would therefore seem to be of little or no use to civilized humanity. Unlike the historicist interpreters, however, they recognize from Emile and from the autobiographical writings that Rousseau attempts to use nature as a standard for civilized man after all. This view has been best

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

articulated by Leo Strauss and others who have followed his lead.[12] These interpreters generally do not agree with the ahistoricists that Rousseau's nature extends into the moral and social realm, but they do argue that Rousseau uses the savage, that is, man in the state of nature, as a kind of formal or psychological standard for civilized humanity. Strauss expresses this view in a simple formula: "Rousseau's answer to the question of the good life consists in the closest approximation to the state of nature which is possible on the level of humanity."[13] History may have removed man from (the state of) nature, but nature, in the form of the savage psyche, can still serve as a model. Thus both nature and history are accorded real moral significance, and justice is done to the complexity of Rousseau's thought.

The reader will find that my interpretation does not quite fit any of these descriptions. It departs from each

---

12. Strauss' interpretation can be found in Natural Right and History (Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1950), pp. 252-94, and "On the Intention of Rousseau," Social Research, XIV, December 1947. Among those who have generally followed Strauss' lead on the question of nature in Rousseau (and I emphasize the word, generally) are Allan Bloom, in his "Introduction" to Emile and in Love and Friendship (New York: Simon & Schuster, 1993); Arthur Melzer, in The Natural Goodness of Man; Roger Masters, in The Political Philosophy of Rousseau; and Victor Goldschmidt, in Anthropologie et politique (Paris: Librairie Philosophique J. Urin, 1974).

---

13. Natural Right and History, p. 282.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

of the three major interpretive tendencies, though, to be sure, it does not depart from each in the same measure.

Although I have not set out to write "against" a particular interpreter or school of interpretation, readers who are well acquainted with the secondary literature on Rousseau might well suppose that I have: the interpretation I am offering will read in many respects like a refutation of the interpretation offered by Asher Horowitz. I cover much of the same ground and ask many of the same questions as Horowitz, though I arrive at dramatically different conclusions. My disagreement with Horowitz and other historicist readers of Rousseau is basic. Whereas they see Rousseau's nature as a long lost starting point, as that which ended or lost its importance when history began, I see it as persisting within civilized human beings. That is to say, I hold that nature is not limited to the physical realm. Through conscience, it is present in the moral and social realm as well. To be sure, history is enormously important. It can utterly overwhelm nature, in the sense that acquired passions can easily make people deaf to nature's voice. Nor is nature a fully autonomous and comprehensive guide: it is not teleological or prescriptive, as I have already emphasized. But nature _does_ persist within us. And it does retain a measure of autonomy: its core is untouched by history and circumstance. Although the variability of law and custom

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

across cultures suggests that nature speaks differently to different peoples, or at least is heard differently by different peoples, there are sharp limits to this variability: Rousseau observes that some things are always and everywhere praised or blamed. (LM, 1102-03) The reason for this is that nature's innermost principle, expressed in civilized human beings through conscience, is constant. Every human being retains a natural love of harmonious order; that is the meaning of conscience. And this love of order is general enough to inform every corner of human life if it is allowed to do so. History may have much to do with how that love is expressed, but there are limits to the plasticity of such a love, and thus limits to the usurpation of nature by history.

My chief disagreement with the ahistoricist reading of Rousseau lies, as one would expect, in the opposite direction. If the historicist interpreters fail to give nature its due, the ahistoricist interpreters grant it too much. The great strength of the ahistoricist interpretation is its recognition that nature does in fact persist in civilized humanity in the form of conscience, the recognition that man's departure from the state of nature and his entry into history did not mark the end of nature's meaningful presence in him. But whereas the historicist interpretation overstates the significance of the departure from the state of nature, this interpretation

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

understates it. True, nature did not disappear from man as he wandered out of the garden of original innocence and into history -- conscience is indeed the voice of nature in in civilized men -- but conscience is not the full-throated moral guide that the ahistoricist interpreters (and their neo-Kantian cousins) suggest it is. It is, rather, a general principle, a love of order, whose manifestations are very far-ranging but whose guidance is far less direct and articulate than the ahistoricists suggest. In truth, then, it is wrong to say that the ahistoricist interpreters overestimate nature's place in civilized life. Indeed, in an important sense they *under*estimate nature's place. What they overestimate is the clarity with which conscience speaks and the ease with which we might discover its promptings. But they generally fail to appreciate just how far-ranging conscience is. Being a general love of order, conscience can have a bearing on every aspect of life, and not just on particular conscious decisions. As nature's agent in the supraphysical realm, conscience is the means by which the soul of civilized man can be made natural. Conscience may not dictate all that one should do in life, but it can inform all that one *is*. And so it turns out to be the source of virtually all that is good and fine -- not just morally, but also aesthetically and in every other way -- in civilized man.

Of the three that I have outlined, the interpretive

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

tendency to which my own work is closest is the one introduced by Strauss. Indeed, my greatest intellectual debt as an interpreter of Rousseau is to Melzer and Bloom and others who have worked within the interpretive framework articulated by Strauss. Yet even so, my interpretation takes issue with theirs on the basic question of nature's persistence within civilized man and its potential relevance to him. Certainly these interpreters acknowledge that nature plays a decisive role in Rousseau's understanding of the good life amid civilization. Yet there is a tendency among them to limit that role to that of formal standard. Nature is seen as something to emulate from afar rather than something to follow or realize. Nor is nature thought to extend in any substantive way into the moral realm. Conscience and other elements of the civilized natural man's (i.e., Emile's) soul are seen as somehow less than truly natural: rather than simply natural, they are "modifications of nature."[14] Only the physical is seen as truly and thoroughly natural. Thus compassion and love, two of Emile's outstanding characteristics and hence, in my view, two hallmarks of civilized naturalness, are said to be "not quite natural but, one might say, according to nature." Only a purely physical sexual desire, of which they are sublimations, is truly natural on this view.[15]

The basis of this interpretation is a reading of

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Rousseau that gives overwhelming precedence, at least with regard to the meaning of nature, to the Second Discourse. The Discourse defines nature in the most minimal terms. It is there that Rousseau expresses and even extends the modern tendency to truncate the realm of the natural. Obviously Bloom et. al. are fully aware that Rousseau speaks of nature in another sense, that he presents the civilized Emile and the highly developed hero of the autobiographical writings as "natural men" and that in Emile he explicitly articulates "what is natural in the civil state."(V: 406; emphasis added) But the conception of nature expounded in the Second Discourse is given precedence over those other notions. Civilized naturalness is seen as a secondary naturalness, as a derivative and hence not quite true naturalness. Emile and the solitary dreamer are natural men only in a formal sense: they are natural in the sense that they enjoy something approaching the savage's psychic harmony, but there is nothing truly natural about the substance of their souls. My position, on the contrary, is that while there is an important sense in which civilized naturalness is secondary to savage naturalness, it is not merely derivative. True, the naturalness of Emile and the naturalness of the solitary dreamer follow that of the savage in some important

---

14. See Bloom, Love and Friendship, p. 109.

15. See Bloom, "Introduction," p. 17.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

respects. The savage *is* the primary incarnation of naturalness, and Strauss is right to characterize the good life in civilization as a kind of replication of the state of nature. But there is also a distinctive, substantive component to post-state-of-nature naturalness -- namely, conscience.

Conscience is natural in the strongest of senses: it is an innate principle in the soul whose awakening from latency is automatic and irreversible in civilized man. (Conscience cannot be explained with reference to the savage, for the simple reason that the savage had no conscience.) The significance of conscience, a significance that is overlooked or underestimated by virtually all interpretive schools, is that it gives a highly particular, substantive meaning to civilized naturalness. Emile and the hero of the autobiographical writings are natural men not only because they replicate certain of the savage's characteristics, but also because this replication is produced by conscience, that is, by their innate and far-ranging love of harmonious order. Conscience is no mere faculty but rather a principle informing the development of the entire person. And what it produces is a particular set of substantive characteristics. It is conscience which accounts for the sublimation of brute impulses into elevated desire -- which is another way of saying that it is conscience which

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

transforms the stuff of original naturalness (the savage) into civilized naturalness (Emile) or "post-civilized" naturalness (the solitary dreamer). Post-state-of-nature naturalness has a very particular substantive meaning, even if that "substance" is entirely psychological. It is precisely that substance to which the majority of this study is dedicated.

THE PLAN OF THIS STUDY

My study begins with the question of ends. What makes the good life good? Wherein lies the goodness of the good life? This is the question taken up in Chapter One, in which I argue against two popular but mistaken notions. Some have argued that Rousseau's highest good, the thing for the sake of which other things are determined to be good, is happiness. Others have argued that his definitive good is virtue. I argue, on the contrary, that the definitive good for Rousseau is neither happiness nor virtue but rather existence, or the maximization of existence. Existence, for Rousseau, is a quantitative if not quantifiable thing. Some people literally exist to a greater degree than others -- by which is meant, to put it into more ordinary language, that some people simply feel more, or feel more alive, than others. Those who live well -- those who exemplify any one of Rousseau's three versions

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

of the good life -- are characterized by a high degree of existence. Their lives are not only better, but also larger, than those of the average run of humanity.

Further, each of the three versions of the good life, whatever the differences between them, has two important things in common. First, each is characterized by a certain psychological integrity. This integrity is itself twofold. It is manifest, first, in a relatively even balance between desires and faculties -- that is, between desires and the ability to satisfy those desires -- and, second, in freedom from inner conflict: neither the citizen nor the civilized natural man nor the solitary dreamer is plagued by conflicting desires or by a conflict between inclination and duty. There are enormous differences between the souls of Rousseau's three exemplars, and each achieves his respective integrity in a highly distinct way, but each does have this much in common with the others -- and with man in the state of nature as well. It should also be noted that, in each case, along with this psychological integrity comes a corresponding moral integrity.

The second thing common to all three versions of the good life is that each has two distinct "parts," or aspects. That is, in each of the three cases, the good life is achievable, i.e., existence is maximized, only through a two-part project. One part, the negative one,

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

consists in preventing or eliminating the obstacles that keep one from enjoying the sentiment of one's existence. It is to this part that the psychological integrity just described belongs, and it is with respect to this part that the savage stands as the perfect exemplar. The other part, meanwhile, the positive part, entails enlarging one's existence through the harmonious development and exercise of the higher emotional and cognitive capacities. Here, in the positive part of the project, the savage ceases to be any kind of a model. His capacities are only barely greater than those of the beasts. The savage never ceases to serve as an overall standard, however, for the growth and development that constitutes the positive component of the good life must always proceed alongside of -- indeed, with deference to -- the negative component, of which the savage is indeed the perfect exemplar.

If my interpretation is driven by a single question, the question of the good life, it is also dominated by a single theme. Central to every part of Rousseau's thinking on the question of the good life is the concept of nature. This is not to say that each version of the good life is somehow to be understood as a natural life. Far from it: although two of the three versions are indeed characterized as natural lives, Rousseau goes so far as to characterize the soul of the citizen as <u>de</u>natured. But even if the citizen does not live a natural life, his psychological

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

integrity represents a kind of artificial replication of man's original -- which is to say, his natural -- condition. Thus, even if only in a formal sense, the citizen meets a standard derived from nature. And if the denatured citizen is conceived with reference to nature, the civilized natural man and the solitary dreamer are much more so. Chapter Two begins the process of illuminating the role played by nature in all of Rousseau's prescriptive thought.

Readers of the Second Discourse know that, for Rousseau, nature refers to origins. The "natural man" was man in his original, brutish state. He was preverbal, premoral and even presocial. On the Discourse's telling, civilization as such is unnatural, as is the development of all but the most primitive capacities. Yet Emile depicts the development of what Rousseau nevertheless chooses to call a "natural man living in the state of society," and Rousseau depicts himself in various autobiographical works as yet another kind of natural man. How can this apparent contradiction be resolved? How can the highly civilized Emile, and how can the solitary but exquisitely sensitive being described in the Dialogues and the Reveries, be described as natural men? My effort in Chapter Two is to ascertain the criteria of post-state of nature naturalness and to illuminate its relation to original, or pure, naturalness.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

What is discovered in Chapter Two is that the primary criterion for naturalness has to do with the quality of one's self-love. All human beings, according to Rousseau, are creatures of self-love. But there are two basic kinds of self-love, and it is the distinction between the two that marks the difference between natural men and everyone else. What Emile and the solitary dreamer have in common with the original natural man, and what distinguishes all three of those natural men from average civilized men, is that the leading form of self-love in their souls is _amour de soi_. _Amour de soi_ is an utterly benign psychic force. The person motivated by _amour de soi_ seeks self-preservation and well-being, but has no interest in outstripping others and certainly no interest in hurting others. Indeed, _amour de soi_ turns out to be actively benevolent in post-state of nature natural men, for it is the source of conscience and compassion. The second kind of self-love is quite different, however. Whereas _amour de soi_ is absolute, _amour-propre_, which is the dominant form of self-love in average civilized men, is relative. The person dominated by _amour-propre_ compares himself and his lot to other people and their lot, and he seeks preeminence. Although _amour-propre_ is not always and inevitably vicious, it usually is. It usually manifests itself in a self-seeking which is at least as interested in laying others low as in raising oneself up -- indeed, given

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

its relative nature, it often can see no distinction between the two. It was with the birth of amour-propre that the species left its original natural state, and it is with the birth of amour-propre that individuals, typically as very young children, depart from their natural innocence today. In most cases amour-propre quickly goes on to become the dominant force -- more often than not, a tyrannical force -- in the soul. It is not necessary that it do so, however. It is possible for amour-propre to be educated in such a way that it forms an alliance with amour de soi and so serves the cause of naturalness. When this occurs, the resulting product warrants the title of "natural man." Emile is such a product.[16]

Chapters Three and Four address the particulars of post-state of nature naturalness, especially Emile's. It is here that my interpretation departs farthest from previous Rousseau scholarship. My purpose in Chapter Three is threefold: first, to demonstrate that there is indeed a particular substance to civilized naturalness, i.e., that Emile warrants the designation of "natural man" in more than just a formal sense; second, to articulate the

---

16. The solitary dreamer, Rousseau's other post-state of nature natural man, is another story -- in a certain sense, a simpler story. Whereas Emile is characterized by an amour-propre which is allied with and therefore secondary to amour de soi, the solitary dreamer is closer to the original natural man: he simply has very little amour-propre to deal with. See Chapter Four, Section III, below.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

outlines of that substance; and, third, to illuminate the relation of civilized naturalness to savage naturalness, that is, to illuminate the process whereby civilized naturalness develops out of and upon original naturalness. (The process whereby civilized naturalness evolves out of original naturalness I call sublimation; the director of this process, as it were, is conscience.) Ultimately the third task is the most important, for success there ensures success at the other two. In addition to all this, Chapter Three includes a comparative discussion. I attempt to underscore Rousseau's distinctiveness by comparing his understanding of nature to the corresponding views of Aristotle and Hobbes, and his understanding of sublimation to the corresponding views of Plato and Freud.

Since naturalness is determined first and foremost by the quality of one's self-love, the proper education of self-love is the only means to achieving naturalness amid civilization. Naturalness can only be maintained where _amour-propre_ is well governed, i.e., where it is allied with _amour de soi_. Accordingly, Chapter Four undertakes a systematic exploration of _amour-propre_. My first purpose in this chapter is to establish just how consequential _amour-propre_ really is. Toward that end I show, first, that _amour-propre_'s appearance is inevitable in every member of society; second, that _amour-propre_ is profoundly ambiguous in its moral potential (cited by Rousseau as the

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

source of evil and misery, it is also acknowledged by him to be the source of greatness); and, third, that the quality of our *amour-propre* has a decisive influence on our character and behavior.

Next, I undertake to define precisely what *amour-propre* is and how it arises. After surveying a number of mistaken interpretations, I submit my own interpretation, according to which *amour-propre*'s essence has to do chiefly with the chronic need of civilized man to achieve and maintain value in his own eyes. Rousseau lists "good witness of oneself" among man's very few true needs. (*Emile* II:81) That need was easily satisfied by the savage, who, lacking self-consciousness, presumably took his own worthiness for granted. In civilized man, however, self-consciousness has enormously complicated the need that was so simple in the savage. The acquisition of self-consciousness has led to the relativization of the need for good witness of oneself and hence to the birth of *amour-propre*. It has done so, and by necessity will continue to do so, in every civilized person. What is not inevitable, however, is the particular character of an individual's *amour-propre* or even its extent, i.e. the extent to which it supplants *amour de soi*. Sometimes *amour-propre* is gentle, sometimes it is cruel; sometimes it takes the form of pride, sometimes vanity. The form it takes depends on the result of the individual's first comparisons of himself

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

with others.

Finally, after this analysis of the nature, birth, and variations of amour-propre, I address the possibility of transcending it, a possibility which Rousseau seems to regard as the very highest available to man.

My project concludes with an effort at critique. Chapter Five raises the question which has been in the background all along: How well has Rousseau succeeded at building an understanding of the good life upon a non-teleological conception of nature -- indeed, upon a conception of nature whose primary exemplar, the original natural man, is barely human at all? To be sure, Rousseau's conception of nature includes civilized naturalness and the naturalness of the refined solitary; nature does not just refer to the savage state. To demonstrate as much has been a major purpose of the preceeding chapters. Nevertheless the original natural state retains a certain priority and the savage remains in certain decisive respects a model even for the most advanced natural man. Origins are both transcended and not transcended, which accounts for much of the attractiveness but also, as we shall see, some of the more problematic aspects of Rousseau's thought.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

CHAPTER ONE:

THE GOODNESS OF ALL GOOD LIVES

Though born free, man is today unfree. Though by nature good, he is today depraved. And though made to be happy, he -- we -- are not. Such is the well-rehearsed core of Rousseau's philosophic system.1 What, if anything, can be done?

What we can not do is retrace our steps to an earlier, happier time. Such a time did exist. The pure state of nature was an historic reality marked by goodness and happiness. So too was the period which immediately succeeded it, the age of tribal society -- indeed, so much so that it may fairly be called "the veritable prime of the world."(SD, 151) Of all this Rousseau is sure.2 He is just as sure, however, that the felicity of those epochs disappeared irrevocably with the innocence that had been its protective shield. Human nature has been forever changed. Though it is possible in thought to strip away history's distorting acquisitions and reveal man's natural goodness and happiness,3(Confessions VIII:371) no such thing is possible in reality. "Human nature does not go backwards," writes Rousseau, "and one can never return to

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

the times of innocence and equality when one has once left it; that is one of the principles on which [I have] insisted the most."(Dialogues III:213) We may no more return to our happy origins than Adam could to Eden.

And yet -- as catastrophic as our Fall may seem, we are not altogether without recourse. For one thing, while we cannot recover what was lost, we can at least replicate, if only sometimes and in part, its most valuable features. We can achieve a partial restoration of our original wholeness. We can do so through one of several possible means -- through citizenship in a virtuous republic, through a solitary life of contemplation or reverie, or through a life of rustic domesticity. The first of these "cures" is most famously praised in the First Discourse and articulated in the Social Contract; the second is

---

1. SC I-1:46; Dialogues III:211-14, II: 130-31 and I:687; Emile IV:237. See Melzer for an extensive and convincing argument that Rousseau's thought really is, as the philosopher claimed, a unified and consistent system based on the principle of natural goodness.

2. For a demonstration that Rousseau believes in the historic reality of the state of nature, see Marc F. Plattner, Rousseau's State of Nature: An Interpretation of the Discourse on Inequality (DeKalb: Northern Illinois University Press, 1979). Rousseau admits that many of the details of the history he recounts are merely speculative, but he is in earnest about the basic facts of the state of nature. For dissenting views, see Robert Wokler, Rousseau (New York: Oxford University Press, 1995), pp. 52-53, and Victor Gourevitch, "Rousseau's Pure State of Nature," Interpretation 16, 1, 1988, pp. 23-59.

3. This is the methodological premise of the Second Discourse and is explained at Confessions VIII:371.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

described, if not quite explained, in Rousseau's autobiographical writings, most notably in the latter pages of the Confessions and in the Reveries of the Solitary Walker; and the third appears in part in the Nouvelle Heloise and the Lettres morales and in full in Emile, which Rousseau considered his best and most comprehensive work. (Dialogues I:23)

Partial restoration: one wonders on hearing this prognosis whether one has heard the good news or the bad. In fact one has heard neither. The truly bad news is that what is possible in principle is exceedingly difficult to achieve in practice and is even more difficult to maintain than it is to achieve -- and what is possible is only partial in the first place. Rousseau believed very little in the realistic possibility of happiness in the modern world. Though we all seek happiness, that which is actually available to us is a much degraded version of what our ancient ancestors had, and there is not likely to be much of it at that. ("The food is so bad here," runs the old joke. "Yes, and the portions are so small!"). What saves us from being utterly comic figures, however, is that neither happiness nor its pursuit is all that makes life worthwhile -- which, strange as it may sound to our liberal Jeffersonian ears, is the good news.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Like other great moral philosophers, Rousseau can be understood in terms of a medical metaphor: he is a spiritual physician who offers a variety of cures and palliatives (some theoretical, some practical) in response to a most extraordinary diagnosis. This much is commonly recognized. What tends to be overlooked or obscured, however, is the complex matter of what it means to be a cure. It is here that the medical metaphor can mislead us. However much physicians may sometimes disagree about appropriate treatments and even about how high to aim (e.g., whether to risk survival for the sake of a fuller recovery), there is seldom much dispute as to what would constitute a complete cure. The standard of health against which one measures the outcome of treatment is ordinarily obvious and universally accepted: successful treatment is defined as the restoration of health; one _recovers_. Just where ordinary medicine is simple, however, spiritual "medicine" -- true psychotherapy -- is not. Rousseau does not define the good life (in any of its varieties) by the extent of one's recovery of original happiness -- nor, for that matter, by the the extent of one's attainment of some other kind of happiness. His standard is both more basic and more complex than that. Natural goodness and happiness do play an important role in the formation of that standard. Far from being the last words on the subject, however, they are only the first.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

BEYOND HAPPINESS, OR WHAT MAKES THE GOOD LIFE GOOD

The place of happiness, like so much else in Rousseau's thought, has given rise to competing interpretations whose inaccuracies derive less from misreadings than from partial ones. On the one side there are those who regard happiness as the goal of Rousseau's thought, as the ideal for the sake of which good things are good and bad things bad.4 These interpreters (let us call them eudaimonists) observe, correctly, that Rousseau bases his most important justifications and criticisms on experiential grounds. Their mistake, though, is in equating Rousseau's experiential standard with happiness. Happiness is indeed one kind of intrinsically good experience; perhaps it is the best experience; perhaps too it is the one which most shields its possessor from the lure of corruption; but it is manifestly not the only intrinsically good state of soul -- not if we understand it in the ordinary sense in which Rousseau himself used the term (bonheur). There are times, in fact, when one must disregard considerations of happiness altogether and act

4. See, for example, Stephen G. Salkever, "Rousseau & The Concept of Happiness," Politics 11, No. 1 (Fall 1978):27-45, and Ronald Grimsley, "Rousseau and the Problem of Happiness," in Hobbes and Rousseau: A Collection of Critical Essays, eds. Maurice Cranston and Richard S. Peters (Garden City, NY: Doubleday, 1972), pp. 437-61.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

instead according to the dictates of virtue even at the direct expense of everything that might seem to be required for happiness.

It is this latter observation that leads to the other common misinterpretation of the place of happiness in Rousseau's thought. According to it, Rousseau is a proto-Kantian moralist who recognizes the inherent disjunction between the demands of happiness and those of morality and who sides with the latter.[5] This interpretation is correct in noting Rousseau's belief in the inevitable tension between happiness and morality and his demonstrable preference, when a preference is required, for virtue. Where it errs, though, is in interpreting virtue as an end in itself, as the thing for whose sake all else is judged good or bad. In fact Rousseau does not view virtue as an end in itself. He loves it, rather, because of what it produces in men's souls and because of what it thereby makes _of_ men's souls. In this the eudaimonists are right. Pride of place in Rousseau's hierarchy of goods belongs to something experiential. Virtue and freedom and all other human goods _are_ good precisely because and insofar as they contribute to something experiential. But what could that something be if not happiness? The answer: "existence," by which Rousseau means the _feeling_ of existence.

---

5. This interpretation can be found in Cassirer, _Question_, pp. 70-71, and _Rousseau, Kant and Goethe_, p. 56; Gurvitch, pp. 260-79; and Levine.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Existence is not only the ground but also the end of life, and its truest measure.[6] The quality of a life, its success, is a function of the amount of its existence; it is a function of the degree to which one feels one's being. Different lives are lived to different degrees. Those who live well live more: they feel life more than others do and thus, using Rousseau's way of speaking, they literally exist more than do those others. That is the very meaning of living well: the goodness of the good life lies precisely in its being a life that is more fully felt. The amount of one's existence, or the degree to which one is alive, has nothing to do with the number of years between birth and death.

> To live is not to breathe; it is to act; it is to make use of all our organs, our senses, our faculties, of all the parts of ourselves which give us the sentiment of our existence. The man who has lived the most is not he who has counted the most years but he who has most felt life. (Emile I:42)

If life is short for us, Rousseau admonishes, that is "not so much because it lasts a short time as because we have

---

6. "Rousseau is certainly not the first to have claimed that there is a natural sweetness to mere life but he seems to be the first to have made that sweetness the final end of life and the root of all happiness. Most of the thinkers who spoke of 'the sentiment of existence,' for example, also described it as pleasant, but they did not attribute to it such completeness and self-sufficiency. They did not go on to conclude, as Rousseau does, that man possesses the ground of his happiness and being within himself." Melzer, p. 41. Melzer's is perhaps the most penetrating of the scholarly commentaries on the meaning of existence in Rousseau's work; see pp. 38-46, 64-68 and 103-05. Also see Grimsley.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

almost none of that short time for savoring it."(Emile IV:211)

Existence is not merely a prerequisite but is actually the substance, the essential condition, of all rewarding experiences -- including happiness, as we shall see presently. It is prior to all other goods: it is that for whose sake those things are considered goods in the first place. Those other, lesser goods must not be lost sight of, however. At least not the moral goods. For if one wants to achieve the ultimate good, the maximization of existence, one needs to proceed morally. "Existence" may have a formal ring to it, but, God and nature being what they are (that is: beneficent), the road to heightened existence or "true happiness" is of necessity a highly moral one.7

It is understandable that the centrality of existence in Rousseau's thought has been so often underappreciated. Whereas the intrinsic value of both happiness and virtue is immediately apparent, the value of existence, except as a prerequisite for worthwhile experiences, is not. Thus there is little reason either for the poet or for the moralist -- and Rousseau was both poet and moralist -- to

---

7. The connection between morality and happiness lies principally in the fact that each is related to order and that each is most typically disrupted by an excess of desire over faculty, an excess that comes with disorderly amour-propre. See Chapter Four for a more detailed discussion of amour-propre and its consequences for morality and happiness.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

speak with reference to anything beyond happiness and virtue themselves, least of all something as strange and abstract as "existence." As one who hopes to influence our judgment and, thereby, our lives, Rousseau speaks about life's great issues in generally ordinary terms. His primary goal is to promote a kind of revaluation of civilization's corrupt values, and so he limits his discourse largely to describing various kinds of experiences and their causes. He is much less concerned to explain the underlying nature of these experiences; perhaps, too, he avoids such analysis for fear that it would descend into the kind of metaphysics he despises as pedantic and necessarily uncertain.[8] But his failure to explain the role of existence does not lessen its vital significance in his thought. It simply means that it is left for his interpreters to reveal it.

How and where, then, can we apprehend the full meaning of existence in Rousseau's thought? It turns out that the centrality of existence is nowhere more clearly revealed than in Rousseau's discussions of happiness. Let us therefore examine those discussions. The full meaning of existence and its preeminent place in Rousseau's hierarchy of goods will become clear only by recharting the same

8. Rousseau's disdain for traditional metaphysics is evident in numerous remarks. For his most sustained attack, see the Third of his Lettres morales. Also see Cranston, p. 289.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

landscape which the eudaimonists and the proto-Kantian interpreters have so differently mapped.

Rousseau's discussions of happiness seem nearly schizophrenic. On the one hand, the vast majority of the causes and conditions that he cites -- and thus, too, the vast majority of his maxims -- are negative. Remove this, avoid that, delay the other. This is the Stoic Rousseau, the moralist who counsels natural simplicity. Alongside the Stoic, though, is the Romantic -- the poet who praises the ecstasies of love, the transports of reverie and the glories of virtue. As different as they are, though, both of these aspects of Rousseau point toward something beyond happiness, to existence, as the true prize of life.

Rousseau outlines the Stoical side of his understanding of happiness in the early pages of Book II of Emile. Very much in the spirit of the classical Stoics he identifies excessive desires as the cause of unhappiness: "[E]very desire supposes privation, and all sensed privations are painful. Our unhappiness consists, therefore, in the disproportion between our desires and our faculties."(Emile II:80) Upon which he asks, "In what, then, consists human wisdom or the road of true happiness?" He answers:

> It is not precisely in diminishing our desires, for if they were beneath our power, a part of our faculties would remain idle, and we would not enjoy our whole being. Neither is it in extending our faculties, for

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

> if, proportionate to them, our desires were more extended, we would as a result only become unhappier. But it is in diminishing the excess of the desires over the faculties and putting power and will in perfect equality. It is only then that, with all the powers in action, the soul will nevertheless remain peaceful and that man will be well ordered.

The road of happiness is a road of restriction and circumscription. The problem being disequilibrium, the solution _in principle_ could entail either diminishing the desires or enhancing the faculties. As a practical matter, though, what we need is the former. The excess of desires over faculties is what a psychic economist might call a demand side problem -- not too little faculty but too much desire. Hence the overwhelmingly negative thrust of Rousseau's formulae and prescriptions. Whatever expands desire must be controlled. Throughout _Emile_ are scattered commentaries and cautions, screeds and strategems, all arrayed against anything that could cause the emergence of unsatisfiable desire. Everything from fables (subversive if heard too early in life (II:112-116)) to books ("I hate books," announces the author (III:184)) to foresight ("Foresight! . . . This is the true source of all our miseries"(II:82)) is seen in light of its potential to inspire dangerous desire, especially the fateful desire to be something other than what one actually is.(V:445-446, IV:242-243; also see _Bordes_ 113-114) Such things are not intrinsically bad -- indeed, they can be used to wonderful effect -- but they are dangerous. Most dangerous of all,

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

though, and therefore most in need of careful and even severe management, is the faculty by means of which these dangers are realized: imagination, that great multiplier of desire.

> As soon as [man's] potential faculties are put in action, imagination, the most active of all, is awakened and outstrips them. It is imagination which extends for us the measure of the possible, whether for good or bad, and which consequently excites and nourishes the desires by the hope of satisfying them. But the object which at first appeared to be at hand flees more quickly than it can be pursued. When one believes that one has reached it, it transforms and reveals itself in the distance ahead of us. No longer seeing the country we have already crossed, we count it for nothing; what remains to cross ceaselessly grows and extends. Thus one exhausts oneself without getting to the end, and the more one gains on enjoyment, the further happiness gets from us. . . .
>
> The real world has its limits; the imaginary world is infinite. Unable to enlarge the one, let us restrict the other, for it is from the difference between the two alone that are born all the pains which make us truly unhappy.(II:80-81)

Rousseau is neither puritanical nor prosaic. He does not oppose desire and imagination per se nor even great desire and imagination but rather excessive desire, unfulfillable desire, and whatever promotes it. And he does so for reasons that not even the most calculating hedonist could dismiss without a hearing. His claim, after all, is that, for us, less really would be more: Less desire (or at least less of certain kinds of desire) would bring us less pain and more pleasure -- which means more happiness, since the measure of our happiness or unhappiness is a function of the balance between our pleasures and pains. ("The happiest is he who suffers the

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

least pain; the unhappiest is he who feels the least pleasure."(II:80))

The hedonist, though, could surely be counted on to raise a few questions. Rousseau's prescription as it has so far been revealed calls for us to follow a _negative_ course (_eliminate_ excess desire, generally by _restricting_ imagination) to a _neutral_ state (equilibrium between desires and faculties). Why, though, should this neutral state of affairs be considered happiness? When does something _positive_ get introduced into the equation? Is happiness simply an absence of pain? In fact it is not. Happiness does have a positive content: the enjoyment of existence. It simply so happens that this enjoyment requires in the first instance less that existence be achieved than that obstacles to it be removed. Excessive desire is bad because the pain of felt privation gets in the way of our enjoyment of existence. Remove that excess and you have opened the way to the sentiment of existence, a feeling that in and of itself gives sweetness to life.

> The sentiment of existence, stripped of any other emotion, is in itself a precious sentiment of contentment and of peace which alone would suffice to make this existence dear and sweet to anyone able to spurn all the sensual and earthly impressions which incessantly come to distract us from it and to trouble its sweetness here-below.(_Reveries_ V:69)

The feeling of existence compensates for whatever life throws at us. "[F]or anyone who feels his existence," Rousseau wrote in his famous letter to Voltaire on the

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

beneficence of Providence, "it is better to exist than not to exist."(*CG* II:306)

For Rousseau the positive content of all happiness consists in the enjoyment of existence. Existence is the soul and the measure of happiness: different degrees of happiness reflect different degrees to which existence is felt and different *kinds* of happiness (e.g., the citizen's versus the savage's versus the dreamy Jean-Jacques') reflect the different *ways* in which existence is felt. Different ways? Indeed: Existence is never felt and enjoyed except insofar as it is our own. The whole meaning of *amour de soi*, the benign love of self that exists naturally in all sentient life, is love and enjoyment of our own *being*. Thus all happiness, as enjoyment of being, is a manifestation of self-love, and what distinguishes the varieties of happiness from one another are the specific shapes and dimensions that self-love assumes.

In its purest and most exalted variant, happiness is consciously experienced as the exquisitely sweet sentiment of existence. Existence proper is felt as the immediate object of consciousness: one is aware that what one feels is "existence unmixed with any other emotion." Such experiences have a decidedly mystical cast, as the boundaries of the self extend or even dissolve with the result that one's self is identified with all existence. "I feel ecstasies and inexpressible raptures in blending,

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

so to speak, into the system of beings and in making myself one with the whole of nature." (*Reveries* VII:95) Love of self takes on new dimensions. What is overcome is not *amour de soi* but simply the narrow boundaries of the original *soi*. "Supreme enjoyment," according to Rousseau, "is in contentment with oneself."(*OC* IV 587)[9] This is all the more true as the self expands. This highest type of happiness is rare, however. It is not available to most people, if only because the normal circumstances of social life prevent it (though there are probably other reasons as well(*Reveries* V)).

Other, more ordinary varieties of happiness are no less constituted by the enjoyment of existence than is the happiness of rapturous fusion. What makes them lower is simply that they are manifestations of a less expansive self-love. There seem to be two general modes in which existence can be enjoyed: in the exercise of one's faculties and in the passive feeling of contentment with oneself. As we have already seen, there is enjoyment -- one may feel one's *being* -- through *doing*: should some of our faculties remain idle, "we would not enjoy our whole being."(*Emile* II:80) Surely a good portion of the free peasant's and the citizen's happiness derives from the labors that virtually define their respective identities.

9. See Grimsley for an interesting discussion of the relationship between existence, self-love and contentment.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

So too is much of Emile's happiness gained through action, including the action of work. Though Rousseau describes him as "the man of nature,"(IV:253) he is anything but idle. He steers a vigorous course between the agitation of the modern social man and the indolence of the savage.

Presumably the citizen's joy in his patriotic service is different from the peasant's joy in his activity or Emile's in his. It seems probable, though, that the differences between different happinesses are manifest even more markedly in their respective passive elements, that is, in the character of the person's self-contentment. Contentment with self is a direct manifestation of self-love. Different kinds of self-love will therefore produce different kinds of contentment. The self-love of the inhabitant of the state of nature was a simple, non-expansive and unselfconscious _amour de soi_. Hence his contentment was comparably simple, non-expansive and unself-conscious. The _amour de soi_ of the Rousseau of the _Reveries_ was infinitely more expansive and conscious; and so, consequently, was his contentment. The self-love of the citizen, by contrast, is not _amour de soi_ but _amour-propre_, the comparative, self-seeking version of self-love that is the source of ambition, honor, pride and vanity.(_SD_, 221-222n.o) In the citizen's case _amour-propre_ is wholesome because it is extended to the republic at large: the Roman loved Rome and loved himself only as a

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Roman, as a fractional part of the larger whole. Hence much of his enjoyment of existence was felt as patriotism and civic pride. And though he wished to distinguish himself individually, his personal ambition was still civic in its substance: he wished to be recognized for excellent service to the nation. The citizen's identity and thus, too, his happiness are essentially connected to the republic. (By contrast the _amour-propre_ of other social men, men who are not true citizens, leads them into vice and relations of personal dependence which so corrupt them as to make true contentment unsustainable.)

As for Emile, he is neither free of _amour-propre_ nor a citizen. Nevertheless, like the citizen's, his _amour-propre_ is trained and channeled into wholesome and generally eudaimonistic directions, though in his case those directions are pity and romantic love rather than patriotism. Thus he finds a part of his passive enjoyment of existence through his relations with others. _Un_like the citizen, though (and unlike other social men), Emile is educated to be a "man of nature." "He is a savage made to inhabit cities,"(III:205) which means not only that his _amour-propre_ is well directed but also that a good part of his self-love remains _amour de soi_. Thus a good part of his happiness consists in the same immediate enjoyment of existence that both the savage and the dreamy-contemplative Rousseau experienced.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Thus far we have seen something of what happiness is. The primacy of existence will not be fully revealed, though, until we take note of what happiness is *not*. Only then will it be fully clear why the eudaimonists are wrong -- that is, why happiness, which is constituted by the enjoyment of existence, ought not to be considered Rousseau's highest good and the goal of his thought.

To be sure, happiness is *a* goal of Rousseau's work. Rousseau presents himself in many of his writings as one who hopes through his diagnoses and prescriptions to make mankind happier. (See, e.g., *FD*, 33, 63-64 et passim) In one typical instance, for example, he describes himself as "a man who takes a lively interest in the happiness of others without being in need of them for his own."(*Bordes*, 112) This interest is certainly evident in *Emile*, whose maxims, Rousseau claims, "are among those whose truth or falsehood is important to know and which make the happiness or unhappiness of mankind."(I:34) But however much he values it, happiness is not the thing Rousseau most wishes for us. *That* thing is not a eudaimonic state but rather a moral one: that we be *worthy* of happiness.

Rousseau concludes one of the defenses of his *First Discourse* by stating "that the bitterness of my invectives against the vices I witness arises solely from the pain they cause me, and from my intense desire to see men

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

happier <u>and especially worthier of being so</u>."(<u>Last Reply</u>, 89; emphasis added) Rousseau's primary concern is the moral stature of human beings. That we deserve happiness, that we live virtuously, matters more to him than that we be happy. Now it is true, as the eudaimonists claim, that Rousseau does not value virtue as an end in itself but rather for its experiential yield. This is evident from the way in which he promotes virtue (his case is always based on the claim that virtue brings contentment[10]) and from the character of his condemnation of injustice (his assault is grounded on the claim that injustice is contrary to nature and therefore produces misery for both perpetrator and victim; if oppression did not also hurt the oppressor it would not be blameworthy[11]). But the experience for whose sake Rousseau praises virtue is not what is commonly meant, nor what he commonly means, by "happiness." Happiness is a lasting state of general

---

10. Rousseau says of the "sentiment of pleasure at doing good" that "it is through this cultivated sentiment that one arrives at loving oneself and being pleased with oneself."(<u>LM</u>, 1116) This claim is the centerpiece of the Fourth, Fifth and Sixth <u>Lettres morales</u>. For further discussion of the psychological justifications of virtue, see Salkever, pp. 32-34.

11. <u>Emile</u> IV:287. For the crux of Rousseau's critique of mastery, see <u>Emile</u> II:85 ("Dependence on men, since it is without order, engenders all the vices, and by it, master and slave are mutually corrupted") and <u>SC</u> I-1:46 ("One who believes himself the master of others is nonetheless a greater slave than they"); also see <u>SD</u>, 156, 173-77 and 193-203. For a fuller analysis see Melzer, pp. 61-63.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

enjoyment and as such it depends in part on factors beyond our control. (Reveries IX:137) The reward for virtue, on the contrary, is something within our own power to achieve: it is what Rousseau variously calls self-respect, self-esteem, satisfaction with oneself and good witness of oneself.12

Self-respect is required for happiness -- for true happiness -- but it is not identical to it. (Does the phrase "true happiness" imply that there is such a thing as false happiness? In fact it does: Rousseau addresses parts of the First Discourse, for example, to "happy slaves."(36)) True happiness necessarily implies a life well lived. One cannot be truly happy without being worthy of it. Worthiness alone, however, does not guarantee happiness. Rectitude has its rewards but happiness is not always among them. Indeed, the world being what it is, happiness is rarely among them. And least happy of all, it seems, are some of humanity's most outstanding moral specimens: neither Rousseau himself, the best (the most good) of men (Confessions X:496) nor Cato, "the model of the purest virtue that ever was" (Last Reply, 80) can be said to have been happy. What these two moral exemplars

12. The reward for virtue is its own kind of pleasure. In one illustrative passage Rousseau claims that "the sacrifices made to honesty and justice compensate me every day for what they cost me one time, and for brief privations they give me eternal delights."(LM, 1103) Also see Confessions VII:254.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

did have, though, and what made their lives eminently rewarding, was the satisfaction that comes of living well. This satisfaction, though morally based, is a psychological reward. To achieve it is to enhance the degree of one's existence -- not by extending one's boundaries outwardly (as in reverie or contemplation) but by ascending into a realm of greater intensity (who experiences life more intensely -- who is more alive -- than the virtuous Spartan risking his life in battle, unless it is the martyr giving his life on the stake?)

"Good witness of oneself" is one of only three true or natural goods.(<u>Emile</u> II:81) What makes it so (along with strength and health) is its necessary connection with the sentiment of existence. Existence, as we have already noted, can only be felt insofar as it is felt as one's own, that is, insofar as one enjoys oneself, one's being. And it is only insofar as the self has strength, health and its own respect that it can be enjoyed. Thus it is for the sake of existence (i.e. for the sake of the <u>enjoyment</u> of existence) that virtue is good. For virtue brings self-respect, and self-respect is in itself enjoyment of existence. There could be no greater reward (living well really <u>is</u> the best revenge): "Supreme enjoyment is in contentment with oneself."(<u>OC</u> IV:587)

A final question needs to be addressed before leaving

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

the matter of what constitutes the goodness of the good life. If self-respect is a component of true happiness, how wrong are the eudaimonists really? Does it really make a difference to say that self-respect rather than happiness ought to be the psychological goal of our actions?

Rousseau's view, as Allan Bloom aptly describes it, is that we face "a sometimes tragic dualism between happiness and morality, unknown to natural man for whom happiness or satisfaction is the only polar star."[13] For the sake of what is right we must sometimes choose against our happiness. But what that really means is that for the sake of our _self-respect_ we must choose against our happiness. But of course what _that_ really means is that we are not choosing against our happiness at all, for our happiness will already have been doomed by the circumstances that eventuated in such a choice: once one knows what action is morally required, one can no longer be happy without performing that action. When Julie declines to run off to England with Saint-Preux (in _La Nouvelle Heloise_) it is because she knows that to choose happiness (romance) over duty (to her father) would be illusory. What she would really be choosing would be the unhappiness of regret. The choice between self-respect and happiness is no choice at all, for one can never possess the latter except by way of the former.

---

13. _Love and Friendship_, p. 118.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

In a certain sense, then, the eudaimonists are right. If self-respect is a requirement of true happiness, one need never choose against happiness. By contributing to or preserving self-respect, the virtuous choice will also be the one which is best from the standpoint of happiness. Nevertheless the eudaimonist position is misleading to the point of serious distortion. For it implies that in Rousseau's view happiness ought to be the goal of life and the measure of its success, when in fact what really ought to be the goal of life is moral excellence (worthiness of happiness) and what really ought to be the measure of its success is existence. The eudaimonist position understates the moral dimension of the good life and tends to overlook the nature of its goodness.

Happiness, *true* happiness, is an entirely good thing. It can never be had at the expense of any greater good, and what it demands of us is consistent with what the good life as such demands of us. Consequently much that will be said in the pages to come will apply as much to happiness as to the good life. Even so, despite the overlap, happiness is not perfectly synonymous with the good life nor its essential content or measure. Rather, the measure of the good life, Rousseau's highest good, is existence, for existence is prior to happiness in two senses beyond the obvious logical one: First, it is the very substance, the positive content, of happiness; and, second, it can be

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

attained -- and can thereby give meaning and quality to life -- quite apart from happiness.

Having established the essential criterion of the good life we are now prepared to address its substance. We know now that a high degree of existence is what constitutes the goodness of the good life. But what constitutes its living? <u>How</u> can existence be maximized?

The answer is twofold. First, obstacles to the sentiment of existence must be prevented or removed. This is the negative side of the project, the side which culminates in equilibrium between desires and faculties and in psychic unity, or lack of inner conflict. To succeed here is to be free of the painful distraction of unending, unfulfillable desire: one can enjoy existence. But balance and psychic unity -- in a word, naturalness -- is not enough. What completes the good life is the positive side of the project, to be executed concurrently with the negative: Existence must be increased by the proper development and employment of the faculties; like the development that produces it, this increase is quantitative as well as qualitative. The negative side of the project essentially amounts to regaining (to the extent possible) the wholeness that seems to characterize all non-human life and which characterized our forebears in the state of nature. The positive side, though, accentuates the

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

distinctively human. In this duality is reflected one of Rousseau's characteristic themes: the continuity and discontinuity between man and nature. Rousseau's ideal (as embodied in Emile) is the full development of man's distinctive faculties and capacities, but development which accords with original nature -- that is, development which proceeds in such a way that psychic unity and balance are not too much compromised. This ideal may well be unattainable,[14] but it is probably worth pursuing. And it is certainly worth studying, for it cannot fail to shed light on (and thereby increase?) our existence.

THE TWO COMPONENTS OF THE GOOD LIFE

Rousseau's "existence," as we have seen, is the feeling of existence. And this feeling requires two things: that we be able to sense it and that there be something to sense. The more we succeed at fulfilling these requirements, the more we exist -- and the better are our lives.

Both requirements of the good life can be met to

---

14. Emile is hardly intended as a blueprint or as the portrayal of a realizable ideal -- as Rousseau himself makes quite clear. (See his Letter to Philibert Cramer, 13 October 1764. (CG XI:339)) Its chief value lies in the light it sheds on the human predicament -- on what is and on what, theoretically, might be. For further discussion of the impracticality of Emile see Shklar, pp. 22-32 et passim, and Masters, The Political Philosophy of Rousseau, pp. 3-6.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

varying degrees; neither, in other words, is a simple yes-or-no proposition. There, though, their similarity ends. The negative task is by its nature a conceptually simpler one. For though it admits of degrees of success, it allows for only so much variety. Success at the negative side of the good life is defined by the approximation of two separate but obviously related ideals: equilibrium between desires and faculties, and the lack of inner conflict (or psychic unity). Each of these ideals, however difficult to realize and however much in need of complex strategies, is such that progress toward it can be conceived as progress along a single dimension. The positive task, though -- the job of increasing what there is to be felt -- can be legitimately performed in countless ways and (perhaps) to an infinite degree. Love, art, virtue, religion, contemplation, reverie: each of these activities offers its own ways to increase our existence.

Rousseau does not address this matter systematically. He nowhere catalogues either the ways to increase existence or the modes of existence or the dimensions of existence (e.g. extent, intensity and elevation). Nor can we infer or deduce a systematic understanding of existence from his writings. Yet even if he does not thoroughly explicate all the positive possibilities, Rousseau still goes very far in developing a fundamentally new conception of the good life on the basis of his unique understanding of existence. His

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

dual-aspect approach is an original and conceptually brilliant solution to the problem of how to define the good life absent anything like the transcendent ideals which informed earlier moral traditions. One of its chief conceptual virtues is that it allows for several varieties of the good life and of happiness while still providing a common standard by which these ideal lives can be defined and by which actual lives can be judged. Another of its virtues is that it sheds light on the ways in which the two components of the good life are related. As we shall see, fulfillment of the negative and positive tasks are interdependent and mutually reinforcing. Desire that is not dissipated can be elevated, and desire that is elevated is in turn the surest defense against dissipation. Thus does Rousseau lay the theoretical groundwork of what we now know as sublimation.[15]

The negative component of living well is essentially the same in all varieties of the good life. The lives of the savage, the citizen and Emile are vastly different but they are each marked by (1) minimal excess of desire over faculty and (2) a high degree of psychic unity. In this they approximate the condition of man in the pure state of nature, who alone among human beings enjoyed perfect equilibrium and perfect psychic unity.(Emile II:80; SD,

15. See Bloom, "Introduction," pp. 15-16.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

151) But they only approximate it; they do not equal it. And this in itself proves that the negative component is not all there is to the good life. If it were, the pure state of nature would have been the best epoch, when in fact it was not. The tribal stage was better, even though man's original balance and unity had begun to be eroded. It was better because the losses on the negative side were more than offset by gains on the positive side. Though beset for the first time by obstacles to the enjoyment of his being, man was still better off because his being itself was vastly enlarged through the development of certain capacities. The price exacted by the emergence of embryonic vanity and occasionally vengeful passions was of a lesser magnitude than the pleasures of conjugal and familial love.

And if the epoch of tribal society was better than the state of nature, the epoch of civil society is -- or, rather, _could have been_ -- better still.

> Although in this state [man] deprives himself of several advantages given him by nature, he gains such great ones, his faculties are exercised and developed, his ideas broadened, his feelings ennobled, and his whole soul elevated to such a point that if the abuses of this new condition did not often degrade him beneath the condition he left, he ought ceaselessly to bless the happy moment that tore him away from it forever, and that changed him from a stupid, limited animal into an intelligent being and a man. (_SC_ I-8:56)

This description of what might have been indicates the things that constitute fulfillment of the positive requirement of the good life. The exercise and development

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

of faculties, the broadening of ideas, the ennoblement of sentiment and the elevation of soul -- each is a blessing because each in some way enlarges our being. The perfect happiness of natural man -- his total fulfillment of the negative requirement of the good life -- is not Rousseau's ideal. Man can and should be more than "a stupid, limited animal," notwithstanding that animal's negative perfection. Nor is Rousseau a more moderate kind of primitivist: nascent society may have been the best that humanity has known, but it is not the best that it could have known or, theoretically at least, that it could know still.

And yet -- as the excerpt from the *Social Contract* demonstrates, success on the positive side is also insufficient by itself. If enlargement of faculties and ideas shatters psychic unity or disrupts the balance between desires and faculties then the net result is a *loss* of existence and a worsening of life (which is why the age of tribal society was in fact better than nearly all of the civil societies which have followed).

For all of Rousseau's accusations against mankind, the most damning is the one he pointedly *refused* to make: "I do not accuse the men of this century of having all the vices; they have only the vices of cowardly souls; they are only rogues and knaves."(*Last Reply*, 72) The increasing failure of modern men to satisfy the negative requirement of the good life has taken a severe toll -- an ontological toll.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

"Vile and cowardly even in their vices, they have only _small souls_."(_Emile_ IV:335; emphasis added) Despite their enlarged capacities -- or, rather, _because_ of them, because of the aberrant way in which they have developed -- modern men have become small. More than unhappy and depraved, they are petty in their desires, their aspirations, their pleasures and their energies -- and all because of their dissipation and, especially, their psychic disunity.

Man in the pure state of nature enjoyed the simplest kind of psychic unity, unity of inclination. So, to nearly the same extent, does the member of savage society. The savage "breathes only repose and freedom" -- he knows how to enjoy his existence -- because he is one with himself, because he "lives within himself."(_SD_, 179) As for the citizen, he too is one with himself, but his psychic unity is entirely different from that of the savage. Whereas the savage lives within himself, the citizen defines himself only with regard to others. He "believes himself no longer one but a part of the unity and no longer feels except within the whole. A citizen of Rome was neither Caius nor Lucius; he was a Roman. He even loved the country exclusive of himself."(_Emile_ I:40) The citizen has been so denatured, he so completely defines himself as a member of his community, that his selfishness is very nearly synonymous with patriotism. And what does remain in him of natural selfishness is mastered by virtue.16 The rest of

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

us, though -- social men and women who are not citizens in the deepest sense -- enjoy neither of these types of unity. We are divided by the conflicting demands of inclination (nature) and duty (society). In modern societies one finds only "double men," says Rousseau, "always appearing to relate everything to others and never relating anything except to themselves alone."

> Swept along in contrary routes by nature and by men, forced to divide ourselves between these different impulses, we follow a composite impulse which leads us to neither one goal nor the other. Thus, in conflict and floating during the whole course of our life, we end it without having been good either for ourselves or for others. (Emile I:41)

This conflict and inconstancy ("floating") -- the twin marks of psychic disunity -- are the immediate causes of modern man's smallness of soul. "Always in contradiction with himself, always floating between his inclinations and his duties, he will never be either man or citizen. . . . He will be nothing." (Emile I:40) If we wish to increase our existence -- if we wish to be more than nothing -- we need to recapture some kind of unity of soul.

Failure to meet the negative requirements of the good life is the source of all our ills. We would not be lured into injustice, at least not often, were it not for the excessive desires that beset us. And we would be able to feel more deeply -- to be more -- were it not for our

---

16. See Melzer, pp. 103-04, and Shklar, pp. 12-19.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

disunity of soul. "[R]ender man one," writes Rousseau, "and you will make him as happy as he is capable of being."(Fragments, 510) But success on the negative side cannot be achieved except in conjunction with success on the positive. Let us examine why this is so.

As social beings we are replete with faculties, feelings, desires and tastes that in the strict sense are unnatural. Unnatural, but not eradicable. For they are almost all the fruits of self-consciousness, and self-consciousness cannot be undone. The advent of self-consciousness was the watershed in human development. Self-consciousness inevitably leads one to make comparisons with others, thereby awakening amour-propre -- or, rather, thereby transforming amour de soi, or at least a part of it, into amour-propre.[17] Self-consciousness also entails temporal consciousness, which inevitably leads to awareness of death. Now amour-propre can be trained and made wholesome. And the awareness of death need not necessarily become the dread of death. In the vast majority of people, though, amour-propre is not wholesome and the awareness of death does become fear of death, with a result very like Hobbes' famous description of human life: "A restless desire of power in all men. So that in the first place, I put for a general inclination of all mankind a perpetual and restless desire of power after power that ceaseth only

17. See Chapter Four, pages 286-301, below.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

in death."[18]

Untrained amour-propre and the fear of death are the two great troublers of repose and enemies of freedom.[19] Generators of excessive desire and psychic disunity, they represent dismal failure at the negative task of the good life. To succeed on the negative side therefore requires that amour-propre be well educated and that the dread of death be forestalled or at least vastly weakened. And what that requires, in addition to what Rousseau himself calls "negative education," is success at the positive task of enlarging existence.

Civilized man will always be a creature of desire. Great desirousness is the inevitable product of amour-propre, which is itself the inevitable product of self-consciousness. The only question is whether these desires will be wholesome or dissipated and therefore destructive of psychic unity: "a young man must either love or be debauched."(Emile V:470) Dissipation cannot be prevented by strictly negative means. Desire cannot be fenced in. If, however, it is focused on an ideal -- if, for example, one is in love -- then desire can be kept from dissipating. As Bloom puts it, "Emile will be moderate because his

---

18. Leviathan, chap. 11.

19. See Bloom, "Introduction," pp. 9-15, for a concise statement of the pivotal roles of amour-propre and the fear of death in subverting social, self-conscious man's goodness and happiness.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

desires are immoderate."20 At first, his foretaste or intimation of love's pleasures, and then, his actual experience of them, make the pleasures of loveless sensuality pale by comparison. And he is further guarded against corrupt temptation by loyalty to his beloved, this loyalty being a source of pleasure in itself. Errant passions are forestalled by the only means possible: noble passions. Emile's positive achievement (love) helps preserve his negative ones (his balance between desire and faculty and his psychic unity).

And vice versa. Emile's early negative education, the education which long delays the emergence of amour-propre and thereby strengthens his psychic unity and balance, serves the positive component. Emile would not be capable of great love or virtue if he had not been kept from things which would have awakened excessive or unhealthy desires, especially the desire to be something other than what he is (hence Rousseau's caution during Emile's early education regarding books, fables, foresight and imagination). The constraint of his energies within fairly narrow bounds creates the psychic pressure which is required for the elevation of his passions and tastes. This is the basis of sublimation: The low (undifferentiated sexual desire) is transformed into the high (intense romantic love) by preventing the early and easy satisfaction of desire and by

---

20. Love and Friendship, p. 90.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

teaching him what at first is a salutary lie but what becomes, through being taught, a wonderful truth -- namely, that the name of his desire is in fact love and that its object is a worthy beloved. Emile's education "concentrates the wishes of a great soul within the narrow limit of the possible"(IV:253) and thereby prepares them to be lured upward until their object, à la Diotima's ladder of love,21 is "imperishable beauty."(V:446)

Sexual sublimation is the paradigm of the necessary relationship between the two components of the good life. Neither the balance between desires and faculties nor psychic unity can be maintained unless desire is elevated, and this elevation cannot be achieved unless high degrees of balance and unity have been preserved in the first place. In fact, sexual sublimation is more than the paradigm. It is the core of the entire project of social man's healthy development. For not only romantic love but also compassion and community-spiritedness, the fundament of any decent society, are sublimated sexuality.22

One way of conceiving of the problem of the good life is as the problem of desire. It is lawless and excessive desire which wrecks the negative component of the good life; and it is elevated and educated desire which

---

21. See Plato, Symposium 211.

---

22. See Bloom, "Introduction," pp. 16-17.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

constitutes the ennoblement of feelings and the elevation of soul which are the stuff of the positive component. This is why Rousseau seems at some times allergic to desire and at others its greatest champion. Of course he is both. Desire is at the core -- no, desire _is_ the core -- of both the best and the worst of lives. And the desire which characterizes the former is in some ways quite close to that which characterizes the latter. The truly good lives are those in which longing and aspiration have led to ennoblement and elevation. But longing and aspiration are perilously close to the desire which lies at the heart of the worst lives, the desire to be more than what one is. Men "turn into ferocious animals because they do not know how to be satisfied with being men."(_Emile_ IV:242) "[B]y dint of trying to raise ourselves above our nature, we may relapse beneath it."(_Bordes_, 113-14) Such are the horrors that prompt Rousseau to make his impassioned pleas: "O man, draw your existence up within yourself, and you will no longer be miserable. Remain in the place which nature assigns to you in the chain of being . . ." (_Emile_ V:83) And this, given as concluding if not parting advice to Emile:

> I have only one precept to give you, and it comprehends all the others. Be a man. Restrain your heart within the limits of your condition. Study and know these limits. However narrow they may be, a man is not unhappy as long as he closes himself up within them. He is unhappy only when he wants to go out beyond them.(V:445-46)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

This is just one more paradox, one more tension, in a system of thought famous for its paradoxes and tensions. Desire is both the means to and the enemy of existence. And great, ambitious desire, as in longing and aspiration, is especially good . . . and bad.

Rousseau does not provide the theoretical grounds on which to distinguish between the best desire and the worst. He does not explain what is different about the two -- we are left to recognize and judge them by their consequences, by whether they increase existence and happiness or decrease them.

Here, perhaps, we have encountered a conceptual weakness in Rousseau's understanding of the good life, a conceptual weakness which, however, has practical consequences. Existence is so subjective a goal and standard that we cannot reliably consult it in leading our lives. We cannot reliably apprehend, as we might within the classical or the biblical traditions, whether this or that longing is a worthy one: after all, destructive passions, passions which in the long run diminish our existence, can feel extraordinarily enlivening for social men who have not been as carefully educated as Emile. Nor does existence tell us how to recognize a good desire gone bad or how to deal with it.[23]

---

23. The consequences of Rousseau's subjectivism are addressed more fully in the critical, concluding chapter. See pages 370-78, below.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Thus for all its theoretical flexibility, Rousseau's understanding of the good life leads him in the end to profound caution and the counsel of constraint. Lacking objective criteria, he cannot adequately make the distinction that the older traditions make between ontological aspiration that is bad and ontological aspiration that is good -- that is, between good and bad instances of the desire to be more than one is. Plato can make a philosophic distinction between the eros of Alcibiades and that of Socrates. The Bible can distinguish between bad and good instances of the desire to be "as God" (In Genesis Adam and Eve are punished for it, but at Leviticus 19 Moses is instructed to tell the Israelites, "You shall be holy, for I, the Lord your God, am holy"). Rousseau can make no such distinction. Or, rather, he rejects the validity of any such distinction. In Rousseau's view, _every_ instance of wanting to be someone or something other than one is is dangerous. Emile, he stresses, must never prefer someone else's position in life to his own, for to do so is to fall prey to corrupting self-alienation. If "he just once prefers to be someone other than himself -- were this other Socrates, were it Cato -- everything has failed. He who begins to become alien to himself does not take long to forget himself entirely."(IV:243)

As we shall see in Chapter Five, the subjectivism of

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Rousseau's basic standards is not the only reason for this extreme caution regarding aspiration. But it is one reason. Whether this caution makes his system inferior to its older rivals depends upon what the effects of his teaching would be if adopted. It depends, that is, on whether his counsel of constraint would succeed in eliminating more bad desire than good, and, even if it would, on whether we are prepared to discard our ancient disposition to see aspiration as the core and even the justification of a truly human life.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

CHAPTER TWO:

NATURE AND HUMAN NATURE, PART I:

WHAT IS NATURAL?

> "Our philosophers never fail to display the word <u>nature</u> pompously at the beginning of all their writings. But open the book and you will see the metaphysical jargon they have decorated with this fine name."
>
> -- <u>Dialogues</u> III:239n.

> "Rousseau . . . constantly speaks of 'nature' as though it were a simple, almost self-evident notion, but as soon as his reader tries to understand its precise function in the many and varied contexts in which it is used, he may be unable to arrive at a clear and consistent comprehension of its meaning."
>
> -- Ronald Grimsley, "Rousseau and His Reader"[1]

Rousseau's effective elevation of "existence" to the position of summum bonum constituted a revolutionary departure from older traditions of thought. Certainly Rousseau was not the first to suggest that there are degrees of reality or that the good life is somehow bound up with a high degree of existence or aliveness.

---

1. "Rousseau and His Reader: The Technique of Persuasion in <u>Emile</u>, in <u>Rousseau After 200 Years: Proceedings of the Cambridge Bicentennial Colloquium</u>, ed. R.A. Leigh (New York: Cambridge University Press, 1982), p. 225.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Platonism, for example, asserts that the "higher" things, the *ideas*, are not just superior to, but are also more real than, the concrete particulars of the material realm and that life is well lived to the extent that it accords with or participates in the perfection of these most real things. Likewise Christianity conceives of salvation in essentially ontological terms. Its promise, more than relief or even happiness, is *life*: the saved are reunited with a God who is the ground, the source, the suchness of being.[2] Nor was the "sentiment of existence" original with Rousseau. Numerous predecessors and contemporaries had already written of its inherent goodness.[3] What Rousseau did, though, was to ascribe to existence a power and autonomy -- and end-in-itself status -- that it had not hitherto been accorded.

---

2. "Be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life."(Revelation 2:10) The promise of life also appears in the Jewish Old Testament: "Choose life -- if you and your offspring would live -- by loving the Lord your God, heeding his commands, and holding fast to Him. For thereby you shall have life . . .(Deuteronomy 30:19)

---

3. Among those who preceded or paralleled Rousseau in writing of the sentiment of existence as an inherently good thing were Diderot, Saint-Lambert, Senac de Meilhan, the abbe de Lignac, d'Aguesseau and John Norris, an English disciple of Malebranche. The basic idea, if not the term itself, also appears in Montaigne's essay, "Of Experience." For a survey of the views of these figures (except for Montaigne) and their relations to the philosophy of Rousseau (and to the philosophies of Descartes and Malebranche), see George Poulet, "Le Sentiment de l'existence et le repos," in *Reappraisals of Rousseau*, eds. Simon Harvey et. al. (Manchester: Manchester University Press, 1980), pp. 37-45.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Prior to Rousseau, the maximization of existence was understood only with reference to something beyond itself. It was seen as a good, but not a self-sufficient good. Hence it was not to be pursued as an end in itself. This is probably most clearly evident in the case of Christianity, according to which eternal and exalted existence is the gift of God and comes only to those who seek it through him. Existence is impossible and, indeed, inconceivable, without God. God is the essential referent. The good life, the life of maximized existence, is the godly life. However difficult it may be to achieve this life, and however much the duality of our nature limits our ability to govern ourselves well, the most fundamental moral questions have been settled by his revelation. For classical philosophy, at least in its Socratic versions, the task of determining what is good is not as simple or as sure as it is for Christianity. Reason must work, and work through fallible human agency, where revelation reveals. There is nothing dogmatic in Plato's or Aristotle's teachings. Yet there is for classical philosophy, just as there is for Christianity, an essential referent without which the idea of enhanced existence has no meaning. Where the Christian looks to God, the classics look to nature. Human beings are understood to be part of the natural whole and, as such, to have a specific, constant nature of their own. The good for man is sought by examining this nature

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

and trying to deduce from it how human beings ought to live -- what ends they ought to pursue and how they ought to pursue them. The good life is the life lived in accordance with nature.[4]

What, then, of Rousseau? We have already seen that for him the good life is synonomous with a high degree of existence. We have seen, further, that in each of its variants the good life has two components: the negative component, which consists in the avoidance or removal of obstacles (such as rampant desires and inner conflicts) that prevent one from enjoying one's existence, and the positive, which consists in the literal extension of one's existence through the development of faculties and capacities (e.g. abstract reason rather than animal prudence and sentiment in addition to mere sensation). But how are these formal goals to be achieved? Is there no essential referent, no substantive source of guidance, defining and pointing the way to the good life? In fact there is, though not to the extent that there is either for Christianity or for classical philosophy. Rousseau's conception of what is good for human beings is informed by his understanding of nature. Psychologically, morally and politically, nature is Rousseau's touchstone. In this he bears at least a superficial resemblance to such classical

4. See, for example, Aristotle, Nichomachean Ethics 1098a8-17. Also see Plato, Gorgias 499e6-500a3 and Republic 369c10 ff.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

philosophers as Aristotle.[5] The resemblance is not much more than superficial, however. For, as we shall see, Rousseau's particular understanding of nature is such that the guidance it provides is necessarily less substantive and less specific than the guidance provided by the nature (the <u>physis</u>) of the classics -- which is perhaps why existence acquires the status it does for Rousseau.

For the classics, nature comprehended the whole of the human realm, including the proper ends of human life. For Rousseau, by contrast, nature refers not to ends but to origins -- and to unrecoverable origins at that. The state of nature refers to a real, historic -- or, rather, prehistoric -- period of time. Only that which was a part of man during this earliest period can be considered natural in the strict or pure sense. Those faculties and characteristics which were not present in the state of nature but which, rather, were acquired over the many centuries that have elapsed since the close of that epoch are not natural. Among these acquired and therefore

---

5. Rousseau's affinities with Aristotle are suggested by his placing a quotation from the <u>Politics</u> on the title page of the <u>Second Discourse</u>: "Non in depravatis, sed in his quae bene secundum naturam se habent, considerandum est quid sit naturale." ("Not in corrupt things, but in those which are well ordered in accordance with nature, should one consider that which is natural."(1254a36-38)) But considered in light of the <u>Discourse</u>, the quote takes on an ironic cast that reflects the limits to the comparison between Rousseau and Aristotle.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

unnatural phenomena are nearly all the distinctive marks of humanity, including reason, language, sociality, self-consciousness, love, shame, envy, pride, vanity and virtue. The wholly natural man, the inhabitant of the state of nature, was a veritable brute: the state of nature was a "state of animality."(SD, 219, n.1) Nature has nearly nothing in common with the distinctively human and would therefore seem to have little to tell man about how he ought to live.6

Yet in spite of its apparent inadequacy nature does give guidance. His conception of nature is as central to Rousseau's understanding of the human good as the classics' was to their's. The good life, the life of enlarged existence, is for Rousseau, as it was for Aristotle, a life lived in accordance with nature. Or, rather, it is for Rousseau, as it was not for Aristotle, a life lived in accordance with nature, for whereas accordance with nature was for Aristotle a matter of following objectively specifiable general rules, what it means for Rousseau is the recovery or recreation of certain subjective conditions which prevailed in the state of nature (e.g. psychic unity and the consequent enjoyment of existence). Strauss, who correctly identifies the apparent uselessness of Rousseau's

---

6. "Man's nature," as Strauss writes, "seems to be wholly insufficient to give him guidance." "The Three Waves of Modernity," in An Introduction to Political Philosophy, ed. Hilail Gildin (Detroit: Wayne State University Press, 1989), p. 90.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

nature as a moral or political guide, observes with equal correctness that nature performs a key function after all: "Rousseau's answer to the question of the good life takes on this form: the good life consists in the closest possible approximation to the state of nature which is possible on the level of humanity."[7] The question, of course, is what exactly this means. If most of what we are is by definition unnatural, what could it mean to live in accordance with nature? And what reason is there to think that an attempt to make our predominantly unnatural selves accord with our brute origins would be worthwhile -- that it could be desirable and successful or even coherent?

But before we examine Rousseau's conception of naturalness in human life we need to address a preliminary matter of decisive importance. Rousseau is famous as a discoverer of History.[8] He shook the pillars of older modes of philosophic inquiry by contending that human nature itself had been changed over time by various vicissitudes.

---

7. Natural Right and History, p. 282.

---

8. Rousseau was not the only discoverer of History, nor even the first. Vico made his own discovery earlier in the eighteenth century, and his criticism of figures like Hobbes and Pufendorf on the grounds that they mistakenly assumed men of the past to have been the same as men of the present prefigures Rousseau's own criticism of these same people. See Scienza nuova, Sec. 314. But if he was not the first, Rousseau nevertheless is the most important discoverer of History, if only for the massive impact of the Second Discourse. (There is no evidence that Rousseau was acquainted with Vico's work, which was to remain relatively obscure until the nineteenth century.)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Some interpreters have gone so far as to suggest that for Rousseau there is no longer any such thing as human nature.9 They believe that for Rousseau "human nature" refers to a set of characteristics that are accidental in origin and that it can again be re-formed by the right social institutions. But such a radically historicist reading of Rousseau is not only wrong, it renders his political and educational programs incoherent. Those programs, whether the massive projects of the Social Contract and Emile or the more modest ones that appear in the Lettres morales and the Letter to d'Alembert, are based on the premise that there are limits to the plasticity of human nature, both in practice and in theory, and that the human condition can be understood and ameliorated only if these limits -- or, to put it positively, only if the universal givens of human nature -- are respected.

THE FIXEDNESS OF MAN'S "PRESENT NATURE"

Rousseau was indeed a kind of evolutionist, though perhaps transformist would be a better term.10 The Second Discourse, written a full century prior to Darwin, recounts the history of the human species from its brute origins to its present state. (SD, 103-04) It tells the history of human nature.11 And while some of the details of this history are admittedly conjectural, its basic themes and

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

premises are not.[12] Human beings have changed radically over the ages:

> Like the statue of Glaucus, which time, sea and storms had so disfigured that it looked less like a god than a wild beast, the human soul, altered in the bosom of society by a thousand continually renewed causes, by the acquisition of a mass of knowledge and errors, by changes that occurred in the constitution of bodies, and by the continual impact of the passions, has, so to speak, changed its appearance to the point of being nearly unrecognizable. (SD, 91)

The substance of this change and its causes and consequences will be addressed later, at least insofar as they relate to the education of Emile. For now let us

---

9. This is the historicist interpretation described earlier. See pages 11-12.

10. Rousseau did not subscribe to anything like Darwin's evolutionism. He believed in the permanence of species; he believed in the permanence of the dividing lines between species. The evolution which Rousseau recounts in the Second Discourse is a sequence of changes by which primitive man became civilized man. There is no suggestion that primitive man descended from any nonhuman ancestor. (See Jean Starobinski, Jean-Jacques Rousseau: Transparency and Obstruction, trans Arthur Goldhammer (Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1988), pp. 326-28.) For this reason, the word "transformism" is probably a better term for Rousseau's view than "evolutionism."

11. It is because Rousseau purports to outline the development of human nature itself, rather than just human events, that I have chosen to refer to his theory as transformist rather than historical. His account does include what might properly be called history (which is why the word "history" will appear in what follows), but the history that is told is part of the even larger story of man's transformation.

12. Plattner has convincingly demonstrated that Rousseau believed he had proved the (pre)historic reality of the state of nature and of certain decisive steps along the path of human evolution or transformation. See Wokler, pp. 52-53, for a dissenting view.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

simply establish two facts: first, that whatever the importance he ascribes to history, Rousseau believes that there still is such a thing as human nature, meaning a universal and fairly fixed set of needs, capacities and characteristics; and, second, that in Rousseau's view the elements of man's original nature continue to exist in his present makeup -- that they have been neither erased nor supplanted but rather overlaid and thereby transformed by historical acquisitions.

The second of these claims is the easier one to establish, though its precise meaning is exceedingly complex and will no doubt remain a live issue for Rousseau interpreters. It will suffice to take note of a few passages from the Second Discourse. In the first, which immediately precedes the comparison to Glaucus, Rousseau poses the philosophic challenge that faces him in a way that demonstrates his belief in the continued existence of at least some of man's original elements:

> how will man manage to see himself as nature formed him, through all the changes that the sequence of time and things must have produced in his original constitution, and to separate what he gets from his own stock from what circumstances and his progress have added to or changed in his primitive state?(91)

A little later he comments that "it is no light undertaking to separate what is original from what is artificial in the present nature of man."(92-93) The clear implication is that at least some of the elements of original human nature, of natural human nature, persist in civilized man.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

That elements of our original nature remain within us does not quite mean, though, that we remain good to that extent. For what was good about natural man was a result not of particular good qualities but of the order of the whole of his being. Thus the unfortunate development of the species has entailed the corruption of what had originally been good qualities as well as the addition of new, bad ones. Calling man to listen to his history, Rousseau announces that "It is, so to speak, the life of your species that I am going to describe to you according to the qualities you received, _which your education and habits have been able to corrupt_ but have not been able to destroy."(104; emphasis added) The paramount example of this phenomenon is undoubtedly self-love. Natural in origin, it was good in natural man and could be good in a properly educated civilized man. In the typical civilized man, however, benign _amour de soi_ mutates into fractious pride and vanity.

But if human nature has changed to the point where the good has turned bad, does it even make sense to speak of a present human nature? Is there anything more to what Rousseau calls "the present nature of man" than just the principle of change?

Some interpreters of Rousseau have argued along the following lines: If human nature has changed, then it is changeable, and if it is changeable, then it really does

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

not exist; man has no nature, only a history; or, at most, if one insists on holding on to the term, there is a human nature but it consists in nothing more than malleability, nothing more than the single decisive characteristic which Rousseau calls perfectibility.[13] Perfectibility, the capacity that has made history possible, is thought to imply infinite plasticity.

The first indication that this is an inaccurate characterization of Rousseau's view (and of the implications of his view) arises from the very belief we just observed: that the elements of original human nature persist in modern man. The persistence of these original elements suggests limits to the plasticity of human nature. No matter how much the statue of Glaucus had changed, its basic shape and the bulk of the matter of which it was made remained the same. But there is more reason than just this to conclude that Rousseau finds it meaningful to speak of a present, fixed nature of man, even if that present nature is a composite of original (natural) and acquired (artificial) elements.

A careful reading of the Second Discourse reveals that in Rousseau's view the evolution of humanity has not

13. See Horowitz, for example, who argues that "Human nature . . . is . . . not something fixed or static; nor does it appear whole, either at the origin of the historical process or as an abstract end transcending it. Human nature is, rather, constituted in historical activity." P. 81.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

been without a certain logic, a logic so rigorous, in fact, that one may fairly conclude that there were really only three possible courses for the human species: (1) remain in its original state, (2) advance to and then remain at the stage of savage or tribal society, or (3) evolve in the particular way that it did. This logic has not been an especially happy one, as Rousseau's nostalgia for tribal society and his pessimism toward the future attest. Nor has it been a redemptive or Rational one, as it would later be seen to be by Hegel. Yet however ambiguous the results, there is a logic, a logic which ultimately accounts for the universality and fixedness of man's "present nature." The process of evolution as Rousseau depicts it is best understood as a chain of inevitable awakenings. What was not inevitable was how far the process would proceed -- that is, which of the three possibilities would be the endpoint. What was inevitable, though, was that it would be one of the three: The realm of possibilities was limited to three stations along the same track.

Man might have remained in the pure state of nature forever. Midway through the Discourse Rousseau claims to have shown

> that perfectibility, social virtues, and the other faculties that natural man had received in potentiality could never develop by themselves [and] that in order to develop they needed the chance combination of several foreign causes which might never have arisen and without which he would have remained eternally in his primitive condition . . .(140; emphasis in the original)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

It required "different accidents" to initiate the process of history.

The second possibility was for humanity to remain perpetually at the stage of savage society, which, we recall, was not only "the happiest" but also the "most durable epoch": "The more one thinks about it, the more one finds that this state was the least subject to revolutions, the best for man, and that he must have come out of it only by some fatal accident."(151) Once humanity "progressed" beyond this stage, however, the historic die had been cast. The remaining stages of human evolution or history -- "the most horrible state of war"(157), "the origin of society and laws"(160), the institution of government and magistracies and, finally, the degeneration of legitimate government into tyranny -- were made inevitable by the discovery of metallurgy and agriculture, the "great revolution" which "ruined the human race" by creating property and the specialization of labor and, thereby, mutual dependence and social inequality.(152-155)14

"By leaving the state of nature, we force our fellows to leave it, too."(Emile III:193) "Leaving the state of nature" here refers to the departure from savage society. (Though distinct from the pure state of nature, savage

---

14. For a succinct explanation of why the "invention" of metallurgy and agriculture made the remaining (and ruinous) stages of evolution inevitable, see Masters, The Political Philosophy of Rousseau, pp. 175 ff.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

society nevertheless belongs to the state of nature because it is pre-political, with "each man . . . being sole judge and avenger of the offenses he had received."(SD, 150)) Once some people stepped out of the state of nature by staking and enforcing claims to property, others were compelled by the requirements of self-preservation to follow suit, lest they find themselves propertyless in a propertied world. And with the advent of property comes intensive specialization of labor[15] and the accompanying revolution in consciousness, that is, the accelerated development of foresight, calculation, and the manifold features of moral and social psychology: discriminations, aspirations, virtues and vices -- in short, all the manifestations and consequences of self-consciousness which, once acquired, can never be shed. Ultimately, though, the reason that human consciousness and human nature *had to* develop in the way that they did once the state of nature was left behind is this: the faculties and characteristics which would later be actualized in human beings were natural potentials from the first, requiring in order to be awakened only that some very general conditions obtain.

---

15. Previously, the only specialization of labor was the sexual division of labor that had come about with the advent of nascent society. ("Women became more sedentary and grew accustomed to tend the hut and the children, while the man went to seek their common subsistence."(SD, 147)) Under that arrangement individuals ceased to be self-sufficient, but each family *was* self-sufficient.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

The acquisition of new characteristics over the millenia consisted largely in the awakening of naturally latent capacities. Consider the following passage from Emile, in which Rousseau contrasts man's original simplicity with his present condition. "In the beginning," he says, nature gives man "with immediacy only the desires necessary to his preservation and the faculties sufficient to satisfy them. It put all the others, as it were, in reserve in the depths of his soul, to be developed there when needed.(II:80; emphasis added) Rousseau gives us to understand that he considers the infant born into civilization to be as similar in its constitution to the infant born in the state of nature as a domesticated animal is to its wild counterpart. The "civilized" infant might be less hardy by virtue of the domestication of his species, but all the capacities and tendencies of his soul -- all his psychic potentials -- were present in the savage infant.16 That human beings of all epochs have been born with the same psychic potentials is also suggested by the striking parallels between the order in which Emile's capacities appear over the course of twenty years and the order in which these same capacities appeared in the human species at large over "multitudes of centuries."17

One of the striking themes in all of Rousseau's major works, all the more striking for its apparent tension with his vindication of nature, is how easily man seems to

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

succomb to the lures and satisfactions of what is corrupt. We find in the Second Discourse that "the rich . . . had scarcely known the pleasure of domination when they soon disdained all others."(157; emphasis added) And we learn from Rousseau's extraordinary discourse on babies' tears in Emile that even at this early stage of life, before one has even had the opportunity to depart from nature, the corrupt taste for domination is easily aroused: "The first tears of children are prayers. If one is not careful, they soon become orders."(I:66) Though Rousseau denies that there is "a natural spirit of domination" and insists that the taste for domination, like all evils, is a product of human agency (in this case, the product of the parents' or nurse's excessive solicitousness), he admits nearly in the

---

16. Recall that Rousseau believes in the permanence of species. It is unclear what that could mean if not that all men, of whatever historic epoch, have essentially the same nature. We should be careful, however, not to underestimate the change entailed in domestication. It is instructive that, in connection with his suggestion that the orangutan may be human, Rousseau implies that the only way to know for sure would be to examine the progeny of the sexual union of a human being with an orangutan. (SD, n. j., 208-09) If Rousseau believed that primitive man was constitutionally identical to civilized man, he could have and presumably would have suggested a much less offensive test: namely, that an orangutan be raised as a civilized human being to see whether it would actually become one. Thus, if all the civilized man's capacities and tendencies were present in the savage, as I have suggested, the awakening of those capacities and tendencies would seem to require the passing of generations.

---

17. See Masters, The Political Philosophy of Rousseau, p. 172 for a suggestive comparison of Emile's (ontogenetic) development with the species' (phylogenetic) development.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

same breath that "it does not require long experience to sense how pleasant it is to act with the hands of others and to need only to stir one's tongue to make the universe move."(I:68) It is not clear why the pleasures of domination should be at all enticing, let alone so powerfully and quickly addicting, unless there is either a latent taste for them by nature or, if not a latent taste, at least a latent capacity for that taste.

Throughout Emile we observe just how fragile are the products of even the best possible, the most natural, education. The book is replete with dire warnings to avoid this or that lest the entire project collapse utterly, and we perceive that the reason for this is that Emile has by nature the potential -- the all-too-easily actualized potential -- for the same evils which have already been actualized in most people. Indeed, as we shall see in greater detail in Chapters Three and Four, what distinguishes the successfully educated Emile from his less fortunate counterparts is not that he has different psychic structures than they have, but rather that in his case the more ambiguous or dangerous psychic capacities are educated in such a way as to preserve his well-being. He, like them, develops amour-propre. He even develops vanity. Or, to put it a little more precisely, these things are awakened in him as they are in everyone else.18 On the subject of vanity, emulation and glory Rousseau has this to

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

say to those who would have his advice: "These dangerous passions will, I am told, be born sooner or later in spite of us. I do not deny it. Everything has its time and its place. I only say that one ought not to assist their birth" and thereby, presumably, strengthen them.(*Emile* IV:226) The point is this: Whether we examine Rousseau's account of man as he is, as he was or as he might be, we find that the same basic features are assumed to be present. Natural man, savage, citizen, bourgeois, Emile -- each has the same deep structures, the same native constitution. What separates one from another is "only" whether and how these same faculties and capacities have developed.

Finally, if the acquisition of new characteristics were not a matter of actualizing natural potentials it seems doubtful that Rousseau would have referred to the capacity for such acquistion as "perfectibility"

---

18. That (the transmutation of *amour de soi* into) *amour-propre* is a latent potential in Emile and hence in all of us is implied in the way Rousseau tells the story of its first appearance in Emile. After upstaging the magician at the fair by duplicating the wax duck trick, Emile experiences the literally dizzying delight of the crowd's acclaim: *amour-propre*, in the form of vanity, has been awakened. Fortunately for him, however, the untimely emergence of *amour-propre* has been foreseen and so is met with the best possible response: humiliation (the magician thwarts his next attempt at glory), which routs this vanity and sends it back into the subterranean tunnels of latency. "How many mortifying consequences are attracted by the first movement of vanity! Young master, spy out this first movement with care. If you know thus how to make humiliation and disgrace arise from it, be sure that a second movement will not come for a long time.(III:175)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

(_perfectibilite_). "Perfectibility" makes sense only if there was already something present to be perfected -- to be awakened or activated and then developed.

Here, though, it would be well to remind ourselves of one of Rousseau's basic tenets. To say that various faculties and capacities were awakened from latency does not mean that they are natural in the pure sense. Only that which existed, which _actually_ existed, in the state of nature is natural in that sense.

The purpose of this cursory examination of Rousseau's evolutionism or transformism has been only to establish that Rousseau does believe in such a thing as human nature. I have tried to confirm that what he calls man's "present nature" is just that -- a nature, meaning a set of universal and fixed needs, faculties and tendencies. But this present nature is quite clearly a composite of (purely) natural and unnatural elements. Not even the most inevitable of human acquisitions is natural, for none of them is _completely_ inevitable: the species could have remained either in the pure state of nature or at the stage of tribal society. The fact that humanity could have remained at an earlier stage makes it possible to insist on the unnaturalness of the road actually taken. The fact that there was only one possible road to take if in fact one was to be taken, though, accounts for the universality and fixedness of man's "present nature." It allows

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Rousseau to say of the great educational undertaking of Emile that "wherever men are born, what I propose can be done with them."(P:35)

As different as they are from their natural ancestors, civilized human beings share the same nature with one another. They are made of the same clay. But human nature is not destiny. Though it defines needs and possibilities it dces not determine character -- else there would be no major differences among human types, whereas in fact there are enormous differences among those who share the same present nature. The Spartan had the same nature as the Parisian.[19] Clay, in the end, is only clay. What really counts is how it is molded.[20]

CHARTING THE HUMAN LANDSCAPE, I:
TWO CHASMS -- ONE BRIDGEABLE, THE OTHER NOT

19. "Human nature, basically, was no better, but men found their security in the ease of seeing through each other, and that advantage, which we no longer appreciate, spared them many vices."(FD, 37; emphasis added)

20. A final note on the subject: To conclude that there were only three evolutionary possibilities for the species thus far is not to preclude additional possibilities in the future. Speaking of our limited knowledge of the soul, Rousseau raises the following question: "How do we know that it doesn't have an infinity of other faculties which, to be developed, are awaiting only an appropriate organization or the return of freedom?"(LM, 1097) Whether he raises this question in earnest or merely in order to underscore the limits of our understanding is impossible to know.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Nature plays different roles in Rousseau's different conceptions of the good life. But there is one respect in which it serves as a positive model for all the variants. What we have been calling the negative component of the good life is nothing other than the approximation "on the level of humanity" of natural man's psychic unity and balance. Each of Rousseau's conceptions of the good life, whatever its other features, borrows that much from life in the state of nature. Even the denatured citizen partakes of this natural quality. His "denaturalization" refers to the means to this natural end, not the supplanting of the end itself. Denaturalization refers to the fact that he is educated to be virtuous (rather than good) and to conceive of himself first and foremost as a citizen rather than as a man -- that he derive his sentiment of existence and his sense of self from his (unnatural) participation in a collective. The process of denaturalization, in fact, is precisely what enables him to approximate the natural man's unity and balance. It establishes what amount to functional substitutes for natural things. Law, for example, is made to have the psychological force of natural necessity.(Emile II:85) The result is a human being who, through unnatural means, achieves a natural or at least a nature-mimetic quality of soul. In this the citizen is far more in accord with nature than is his inwardly conflicted bourgeois counterpart, in whom nature is contradicted, not

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

served, by the unnatural.

The fundamental polarity in Rousseau's prescriptive thought is therefore not the one between nature and society, which has so often been seen as such. Rather, it is the one between accordance with nature and contradiction with nature: Deeper than the chasm between natural man and citizen is the one that finds both of those men together on one side and the conflicted, excessively desirous person -- the typical social man -- on the other. For it is the latter polarity, not the former, which translates into the all-important opposition from a moral and psychological standpoint: namely, the one between being well-souled, or living a good life, and not living well.

At this point, though, it would be helpful to make a terminological refinement. Quite obviously there are enormous differences between the natural man and the citizen, whatever their (negative) similarities. There is a reason, after all, that the distinction between the two has been so widely recognized. Readers of _Emile_ are told emphatically from the earliest pages that no one can be both man and citizen and that the difference between the two is a matter of being educated according to nature versus being denaturalized, which is Rousseau's own word (_denaturer_).(I:39-40) Let us therefore apply the label "natural" only to those whom Rousseau himself calls (or implicitly describes as) natural -- that is, to the denizen

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

of the state of nature, Emile and the socially marginal Jean-Jacques of the Dialogues and Reveries.[21] And let us say of those who bear some resemblance to one of these three exemplars that they are, to the extent of this likeness, close to nature. (Here are included, for example, members of savage societies, free peasants and those who lead more cultivated but retiring lives.[22]) As for the denatured citizen, though, rather than call him natural (he is not) or say that he lives in accordance with nature (a phrase which perhaps overstates the relationship), let us say that he lives -- or that his soul is -- in a kind of correspondence with nature. The citizen's soul is well ordered and as such, though not natural, corresponds to the order that existed, by nature,

---

21. Jean-Jacques as a man of nature also appears in the Confessions, though it is not until the latter parts of the book that he even partially succeeds at adopting a way of life that accords with the naturalness that he has managed to preserve through the course of his checkered life. For two different interpretations of the Confessions as the story of a return to nature, see Christopher Kelly, Rousseau's Exemplary Life: The Confessions as Political Philosophy (Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press, 1987) and Ann Hartle, The Modern Self in Rousseau's Confessions (Notre Dame, Indiana: University of Notre Dame Press, 1983).

---

22. Examples of those who manage to lead somewhat natural lives on the margins of society, or in their own small societies, are the residents of Clarens in Julie and perhaps Madame de Warens at Annecy and Chambery. An indication of the meaning and requirements of (a successful version of) such a life is found in the Lettres morales, which Shklar calls "the clearest and most reliable account of Rousseau's real beliefs" (pp. 229-30) and which can be read as a sort of instruction manual for those who wish to achieve a closeness, if not a return, to nature.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

in primitive man's soul.23

In light of this new terminological distinction let us modify what was said above and say instead that the crucial chasm in Rousseau's human landscape is between those who live in a way that is consistent with nature, or who maintain a positive relation with nature (whether it be a relation of identity, accordance or correspondence), and those who do not, but who, rather, live in contradiction with nature by virtue of their lack of psychic and moral integrity. Confirmation that this is indeed the case, that this gulf is deeper by far than the one between nature and

---

23. As Patrick Riley puts it, the general will, which is the leading principle in the citizen's soul, "echoes an orderly nature." See The General Will Before Rousseau: The Transformation of the Divine into the Civic (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1986), p. 258.

The semantic distinctions used to designate the different relations to nature are inevitably arbitrary, but they are necessary. The following table illustrates some of the relations between the key terms used in this chapter, including terms that will be introduced in the sections yet to come. The capitalized words represent the five human types that constitute the range of basic possibilities in Rousseau's work; the five are defined by the relations to nature that they embody (see pages).

Consistency with nature:
- Correspondence with nature: THE VIRTUOUS CITIZEN
- Naturalness, or three "m[e]n of nature":
  - THE INHABITANT OF THE PURE STATE OF NATURE, a.k.a. the original natural man or the savage
  - EMILE, a "natural man in the state of society" (III:205)
  - the JEAN-JACQUES of the Reveries, Dialogues, and latter parts of the Confessions

Contradiction with nature:
- Those who lack psychic unity and balance, i.e. THE TYPICAL SOCIAL MAN, the bourgeois; also those who are ambitious for vanity's sake

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

society, is found in the fact that the latter pair of contraries are not irreconcilable. That is to say, whereas a compromise between consistency with nature (psychic unity and balance) and contradiction with nature (the moral and psychic ills of the divided man) necessarily produces a corrupt result, as must any compromise between health and sickness or between probity and corruption, a reconciliation between nature and society can produce a good result, preserving the integrity of each element. One finds in Rousseau's work several instances of such successful reconciliation. Among these are the Golden Age of nascent society described in the Second Discourse and the idyllic life at Clarens in the Nouvelle Heloise, as well as passages in both Emile and the Dialogues in which Rousseau gives voice to his wish, as a natural man, for "the sweetness of true society."24 ("[A]bsolute solitude is a state that is sad and contrary to nature . . . Our sweetest existence is relative and collective, and our true self is not entirely within us."(Dialogues II:118)) One might even include as an example of a nature-society reconciliation Rousseau's contemporary Genevans, whose civic life seems to have been considerably more tempered by naturalness than was, say, the republican Romans'.

24. The natural man's love of "the sweetness of true society" is described at Dialogues III:225. Another statement of natural man's (Jean-Jacques') sociability appears at II:165, where friendship is listed among Jean-Jacques' four requirements for happiness.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

The reconcilability of nature and society does not contradict Rousseau's insistence upon the incompatability of nature and citizenship. Apart from their single basic similarity (their shared psychic unity, their positive relationship with nature), natural man and citizen are indeed cut from wholly different cloth: "one must choose between making a man or a citizen, for one cannot make both at the same time."(Emile I:39) Nature and citizenship are roads that do not meet. Nature and society, however, are not such utter contraries. The inhabitant of the state of nature was indeed asocial. So, too, though perhaps not so completely, is the "Solitary Walker" of the Reveries. But these are only two of Rousseau's three ideal natural types.25 The third, the mature Emile, is social. "[A]lthough I want to form the man of nature, the object is not, for all that, to make him a savage and to relegate him

---

25. As the preceding note indicates, the Jean-Jacques of the Dialogues is more sociable than the Jean-Jacques of the Reveries. Not that he has much of a social life, but he does miss one, whereas the Jean-Jacques of the Reveries has more happily reconciled himself to his solitude.

Many readers have failed to respect the distinction between sociability and citizenship. Thus they have read Emile as an attempt to reconcile nature and citizenship, and not just nature and society. (See, for example, John Charvet, "Individual Identity and Social Consciousness in Rousseau's Philosophy," in Hobbes and Rousseau: A Collection of Critical Essays, eds. Cranston and Peters, pp. 462-83.) True, Emile in the end will take part in a political community. But his soul is that of the civilized natural man, and as such it is worlds away from the soul of the true citizen. There is every reason to believe that Rousseau is in earnest when he insists upon the necessity to choose between raising a man and raising a citizen.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

to the depths of the woods."(IV:255) Hardly. Lover, friend and benefactor, Emile is Rousseau's paradigmatic example of the reconcilability of nature and society. He is a wholesomely social man whose sociability is an integral part of his naturalness.

By considering two of its more important divisions and their relative depths we have made a start in mapping Rousseau's landscape of human possibilities. But if we wish to achieve a more comprehensive and even systematic understanding we shall have to approach the terrain from a different perspective. We need to chart the human terrain in human terms -- that is, in terms of ideal human types (which are already abstract enough) rather than in the terms of disembodied philosophic principles (which are even more abstract yet).

CHARTING THE HUMAN LANDSCAPE, II:
FIVE HUMAN TYPES, THREE NATURAL MEN, ONE CIVILIZED SAVAGE

Rousseau's corpus presents a cast of characters second in richness only (perhaps) to Plato's in the annals of philosophic literature. Myriad personalities populate his works, exhibiting a panoramic range of dispositions and representing widely varying degrees of moral health. Yet for all its variety and respect for individuality,

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Rousseau's human landscape is defined by five basic types. The five are: first, the divided, corrupt social man, the most common modern example of whom is the bourgeois but whose most perfect examplars (by Rousseau's account) are the vain, malicious philosophes who conspired against Jean-Jacques;[26] second, the virtuous citizen of the ancient, austere polis; third, the inhabitant of the state of nature; fourth, the Jean-Jacques of the Reveries and selected other autobiographical depictions; and, fifth, Emile.[27] These figures represent the fundamental alternatives that are or have been available to humanity. They represent the set of basic responses to the question of how to live, for together they constitute the full range of basic responses to the most decisive substantive question facing men and women in Rousseau's view: namely, the question of one's relation to nature -- whether, and if so, how, one lives in a way that is consistent with nature. Consequently these exemplars serve as poles of moral and

---

26. Christopher Kelly and Roger Masters observe that the conspirators are seen by Rousseau as "the victims of the most extreme departure from nature just as much as they are the vicious perpetrators of a crime against an innocent man." See their "Introduction" to the Dialogues, p. xxv.

"Jean-Jacques" refers to Rousseau's autobiographical depictions in the Reveries, Dialogues and Confessions and not to Rousseau the writer.

---

27. The order in which I have listed these five types reflects only the order in which we shall treat them in the following discussion. It does not reflect any sort of rank order, except that the first is the lowest by any moral standard.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

psychological orientation: Real men and women can be best understood and their lives most equitably judged according to their similarity to one or another of the five ideal types.

Of the five only the first, the social man who lacks both moral and psychological integrity, lives in contradiction with nature in the deepest sense. He alone (though, alas, "he" is the majority of humanity) does not live a good life. Divided in his soul between the conflicting demands of nature and society, he is neither natural nor wholesomely denatured, neither good nor virtuous, but rather vain and restless and unhappy -- and consequently short on "existence." Each of the remaining four types, by contrast, does represent a life consistent with nature's harmonious essence. Each is marked by a relatively high degree of psychic unity and balance. What distinguishes these four from one another are the different ways in which their consistency with nature is achieved and manifest.

The citizen, as we have already seen, achieves his consistency with nature through the paradoxical means of denaturalization. The centerpiece of his denaturalizing education is the transformation of his natural self-love into patriotism, which in its wholesome form is nothing other than extended and virtuous but unnatural <u>amour-</u>

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

propre. (All amour-propre is unnatural in the pure sense, but what makes the citizen's unnatural even in a less strict sense is the extreme extent to which it supplants his natural individualism.) He is consistent with nature in the sense that he manifests an inner order and an outer benevolence (toward his fellow citizens if not to outsiders) that replicate on the human level the harmonious order of nature. Thus can Rousseau, the apostle of nature, admire the citizen, in whom nature seems to have been so decisively overcome.28 But the citizen's replication of nature is after all a rather abstract and artificial one. It begins and ends with the merely formal fact of order: the substance of this order -- his self-understanding and view of the world -- has its basis in an artificial collective and so is itself artificial. And it is for this reason that, however consistent it may be for him to admire the virtuous citizen as a human possibility, Rousseau never describes the citizen as natural. That label is reserved for others -- for three others, to be exact.

Each of the three remaining exemplars -- the savage, Jean-Jacques and Emile -- is explicitly described as a

---

28. The citizen does retain certain other natural characteristics, however, such as strong erotic and familial attachments. Indeed, the defining characteristic of his denaturalization, his patriotism, develops as an extension of familial love. For an illuminating discussion of the naturalness of the denaturalized citizen see Joel Schwartz, The Sexual Politics of Jean-Jacques Rousseau (Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1984), pp. 47-61.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

natural man.[29] The savage, by which Rousseau means the inhabitant of the state of nature, is natural in the pure sense. With him there is no need to speak of accordance with nature or with some basic principle of nature. He is, or, rather, was, simply natural -- which is to say that his endowments, his motivations and his behavioral repertoire owed nothing to history or his own doing. All was as it had originally been. He was a natural man because he was exactly as nature had made him. He was natural in the same pure sense that a tree or even a rock is natural. Certainly his freedom and perfectibility[30] distinguished him from the rest of nature, from the tree and the rock, even conferring on him a unique dimension of spirituality.[31] But his possession of these attributes did not compromise his naturalness. Although they ultimately proved to be the gateway out of the state of nature, freedom and perfectibility were not -- and are not -- unnatural. However ambiguous their potential effects, freedom and perfectibility are themselves parts of nature just as surely as man's physical attributes for they, as much as the latter, were present in the first man. They antedated history. And whatever else "nature" means in

---

29. See, for example, _SD_, 95, _Emile_ III:205 and IV:255, and _Dialogues_ II:107, 114 and 158.

30. See _SD_, 113-15.

31. See _SD_, 114.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Rousseau's work, its primary meaning is origins.32

What else *does* "nature" mean in Rousseau's work? The question arises as we turn to our remaining two exemplars. For not only the savage but also Jean-Jacques and Emile are labeled "m[e]n of nature."(*Dialogues* III:214; *Emile* IV:253, 255, 260, I:48 and III:205) How can this be so? As far distant as they are from the savage -- and from one another, for that matter -- how can these two figures, one a man of extraordinary imagination, the other sociable, and both richly endowed with sense and sensibility, be natural men? "There is a great difference between the natural man living in the state of nature and the natural man living in the state of society."(*Emile* III:205) That is apparent. What is not apparent, though, is why Jean-Jacques and Emile should be considered natural at all, *in any sense*. And why them but not the citizen (who, as we have seen, does live in a certain accordance with nature)? Presumably they share some crucial trait or traits with the savage. His application of the same label to the savage, Jean-Jacques and Emile tells us that Rousseau sees a defining commonality among the three "men of nature," a shared core that not only distinguishes them from the corrupt social

---

32. Rousseau's equation of what he calls "nature" in the *Second Discourse* or what he calls "what is natural in the savage state" in *Emile* (V:406) with origins is apparent throughout both works. See especially the Preface to the *Discourse*, in which "natural man" and "original man" are used interchangeably.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

man but which also unites them in opposition to the well-souled citizen and which constitutes their naturalness. An adequate understanding of Emile will depend, as would a good understanding of Jean-Jacques, on our discerning this common core. For we shall not be able to understand these "men of nature" without understanding the meaning of "nature," and we shall be able to understand nature only by identifying the trait(s) held in common, and held alone, by the three very different natural men.

The common ground between the savage, Jean-Jacques and Emile will not be found in their respective activities or inclinations, nor among their specific cognitive or emotional capacities. The most superficial examination reveals that great differences abound between them at these levels. For example: The savage is indolent, and so is Jean-Jacques, at least by his own account; but Emile is active and has a taste for the pleasures of mastery (of things, not men).33 One finds similar disparities with regard to their respective capacities as thinkers: the savage is no more a _res cogitans_ than are the beasts, who themselves possess a kind of brute prudence, whereas Emile and Jean-Jacques are quite capable reasoners, to say the least; indeed, they are both scientists of sorts, the

33. "All men are naturally lazy . . ."(_Dialogues_ II:144 But Emile enjoys the mastery that comes from practical science and learning a trade.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

former in the service of his immediate interests, the latter for aesthetic pleasure.(Emile III:167-72; Confessions XII:620 ; Reveries V:64-65) And if we look at that most distinctively human mental capacity, imagination, we observe that the savage lacks it altogether, as does the young Emile, while Jean-Jacques is a man of extraordinary imagination and the mature Emile veritably lives off of the fruits of imagination, for imagination is a vital ingredient in the romantic love (and therefore a prerequisite for the conjugal love) that gives his life so much of its meaning. As for the passions, the same degree of difference seems to obtain: The savage is asocial and premoral, which means that all of his desires are exclusively physical, whereas both Jean-Jacques and Emile partake of a moral dimension in their passions and desires: they are respecters of persons as persons, which is to say that the judgements and feelings of others are included among the objects of their desires. However -- if the realm of everyday passions does not encompass the common ground of the three natural men, it does at least point to it. For the common core, the common naturalness, uniting the three is located at the source of the passions, which is: self-love.

The corrupt social man is motivated predominantly by an unwholesome amour-propre; the citizen, by a wholesome, which is to say virtuous, amour-propre. In neither of

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

their cases does much amour de soi survive society's education. In the three so-called men of nature, by contrast, amour de soi does survive. And it is this, the survival of man's original self-love, that signifies naturalness amid the innumerable artifices and acquired faculties of civilization.

In the savage amour de soi goes altogether untouched, for there is nothing -- there is no society -- to taint or transform it. With Jean-Jacques the story is more complicated. His is indeed a story of survival. He does develop amour-propre, and at an early age, but for reasons unique to his own genius he is able to maintain his natural goodness, his amour de soi, and eventually to shuck or transcend (for the most part) the heart-constricting tentacles of amour-propre. He seems always to have felt, and to have felt the value of, his -- man's -- natural goodness. And, miraculously, he is able to put his outstanding intellect and imagination in the service of nature: first by discovering and articulating the principle of natural goodness, then in living according to the precepts he draws from it and finally by telling the tale. The details of his story -- how it is that he is able to maintain his benign self-love and thereby remain a natural man in spite of amour-propre and other, even more conspicuously unnatural characteristics -- is too large a subject to be taken up here, and in any event it has been

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

thoughtfully addressed by others.34

Our concern, rather, is how Emile is able to maintain _his_ naturalness -- and, for that matter, whether it is consistent and meaningful for Rousseau to call him natural at all. For if Jean-Jacques' naturalness is a complicated affair, Emile's is even more so. Though he is not the exceptional man that Jean-Jacques is -- or perhaps _because_ he is not exceptional by birth -- it is even more difficult to understand his naturalness than Jean-Jacques'. Sociable and active, he has fewer apparent affinities with the savage than does the solitary, indolent _promeneur_. To the question, Why is Jean-Jacques able to maintain his naturalness, his _amour de soi_, in the face of society and his own _amour-propre_?, we may answer: Because he is exceptional. How, though, does Emile, with his ordinary endowments, maintain _his_ naturalness, _his_ _amour de soi_, in the face of society and his own _amour-propre_? A complete answer to this question requires an explanation of what it means to be a "natural man living in the state of society," an explanation that will occupy the remainder of this study.

But before we move on to the question of Emile's naturalness, we still need to determine the more general and basic meaning of naturalness in human life. Why does

---

34. See especially Kelly; Hartle; and Schwartz, pp. 98-102.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Rousseau consider the survival of _amour de soi_ sufficient grounds for being a "man of nature" even when that man has a host of acquired characteristics? Why does that one natural trait outweigh all the unnatural ones? To be sure, _amour de soi_ alone does not make a man natural in the pure sense; only the inhabitant of the state of nature qualifies for that distinction. But it _is_ enough to merit the designation of naturalness in a looser sense. Before examining the particulars of Emile's naturalness we need to determine as best we can why Rousseau would choose to confer the label of naturalness upon anything less than the purely natural origins of the species -- why, that is, he allows for any such thing as "the natural man in the state of society," for any such creature as "a savage made to inhabit cities."(_Emile_ III:205)

Rousseau's assignment of the "man of nature" label to those in whom _amour de soi_ has survived, to those who are not dominated by _amour-propre_, is, in the first place, a reflection of the supreme importance he attaches to the question of self-love.35 That question is one of "which" or "what kind," not "whether." Every human being, from the most evil to the most benevolent, is fundamentally shaped

---

35. The term "self-love" is used here to represent the generic category which includes both _amour de soi_ and _amour-propre_. To avoid confusion, and because there is no adequate English equivalent of _amour-propre_, those terms will always be rendered in French.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

and motivated by one kind of self-love or another. Every desire and passion derives from it.

> The source of our passions, the origin and the principle of all the others, the only one born with man and which never leaves him so long as he lives is love of self [*amour de soi*] -- a primitive, innate passion, which is anterior to every other, and of which all others are in a sense only modifications. (*Emile* IV:212-13)

Every feeling -- and therefore every other part of the psychic economy -- comes from this same wellspring. Even compassion and public-spiritedness have their sources in self-love: the former is a natural outgrowth of *amour de soi*, the latter an expression of well and civically educated *amour-propre*. (*Emile* IV:235n., *Dialogues* II:158; *Emile* IV:252)36

To recognize the central role of self-love is to know the first thing -- but only the first thing -- about human psychology and behavior. *Amour de soi* may be the wellspring, but history has opened a great distance between ourselves and that source, subjecting the rivers of passion to tortuous geography and mixing into them the waters of foreign tributaries. The source of the passions "is natural, it is true. But countless alien streams have swollen it. It is a great river which constantly grows and in which one could hardly find a few drops of its first waters." (*Emile* IV:212) That is to say, self-love is the

---

36. The respective roles of *amour de soi* and *amour-propre* in producing compassion and public-spiritedness are addressed in Chapters Three and Four.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

source of all the passions, but self-love is no longer what it was in the state of nature. It is no longer only one thing. Nor is it even the same thing in all human beings. In most it has become an admixture of *amour de soi* and *amour-propre*, with the latter in the dominant -- indeed, in a tyrannical -- position. (*Dialogues* II:154, 144) It is they to whom Rousseau is referring in the quoted lines: it is they in whom impure alien streams (writ: *amour-propre* in its base, egoistic form) have overwhelmed original, natural self-love. But even the self-love of the civilized "men of nature," of those from whom *amour-propre* is absent or in whom its rule is sharply limited, has undergone great modification. The *amour de soi* of Jean-Jacques and Emile is not the same as their natural predecessor's; it has been changed -- not polluted by alien streams but deepened and enriched by the acquisition of new faculties and sensibilities.

No question is more important for humanity than the question of self-love. Whether and to what extent one is motivated by *amour de soi* or *amour-propre* and how *amour-propre* is educated -- these are the factors that determine how one experiences one's existence and how one conducts oneself. Self-love shapes our passive experience of the world because it determines our conception of our interest, and it is interest, personal or otherwise, which governs our attention.37 It shapes our activity because it is "the

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

source of our passions [and] the origin and principle of all the others," and it is the passions which motivate human activity.38 Self-love determines who and what we are, for it is the fountainhead of all our sentiments, and it is sentiment which constitutes the substance of our identity, sentiment which directs the activity of the senses and of reason, and sentiment which raises or lowers the soul to the astounding levels that inspired and provoked so much of Rousseau's famously passionate rhetoric. As the source and principle of all sentiment, self-love is <u>the</u> decisive ingredient in the psychic economy and, consequently, the thing most consequential for the moral and political realms.

Given this momentous significance, we should not be surprised that Rousseau accords to self-love such singular philosophic status -- that he makes it the sole consideration in determining whether one deserves to be

---

37. "[S]avage man," says Rousseau, "subject to few passions and self-sufficient, had only the sentiments and intellect suited to [the savage] state; he felt only his true needs, saw only what he believed he had an interest to see."(<u>SD</u>, 137) Civilized man, too, sees only what he believes he has an interest to see. What distinguishes him from the savage is not the principle guiding his awareness but the scope of things in which he believes, rightly or wrongly, he has an interest.

---

38. "Each age has its own springs that make it move, but man is always the same. At ten he is led by cakes, at twenty by a mistress, at thirty by the pleasures, at forty by ambition, at fifty by avarice."(<u>Emile</u> V:431) Emile, too, is led by passions. The goal of his education is to shape him to be led by wholesome and sublime passions.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

designated a "man of nature." Despite their numerous unnatural acquisitions, both Emile and Jean-Jacques are called natural because they join the savage in being motivated (predominantly) by amour de soi rather than amour-propre. Their possession of this one natural characteristic -- and even that in a rather attenuated form -- outweighs all their accumulated unnaturalness. But of course that one natural characteristic is not really one at all. It is manifold in its productions and effects, analogous in its influence on the individual to the influence, as seen by a later observer, of a people's social condition on its civil society: "it creates opinions, gives birth to feelings, suggests customs, and modifies whatever it does not create."[39]

For all their obvious differences, their shared freedom from amour-propre's dominion makes the three men of nature alike in the most decisive respects: Each "lives [predominantly] within himself"(SD, 179), enslaved neither to opinion nor to agitated, unfulfillable desire and able, therefore, to enjoy as much of the sweetness of existence as his capacities and the world around him permit.

Those who live under the dominion of amour-propre, by contrast -- or, rather, those who live under its tyrannical

---

39. That later observer was himself a serious student of Rousseau. Alexis de Tocqueville, Democracy in America, trans. George Lawrence, ed. J.P. Mayer (Garden City, NY: Anchor Books, 1969), p. 9.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

dominion (a qualification that exempts the denatured but virtuous citizen) -- lack precisely these two freedoms. They are slaves both to opinion and to excessive, inherently unfulfillable desire. And therein lies the immediate source of their unnaturalness; therein lies what it is that keeps them from being natural even in the loose, or civil, sense. The general or more remote cause of their departure from nature is *amour-propre*. But the immediate source of unnaturalness is enslavement to opinion and to rampant desire, for this dual enslavement is what actually separates them from nature. It does this in two respects: It distorts their perception of the world, causing them to mistake appearance for reality and prejudice for truth; and it disrupts their psychic equilibrium, the balance between faculties and desires, by subjecting them to desires whose objects are as innumerable as they are illusory. It places them in Plato's cave and, what's more, sets them chasing after the shadows.

This contrast with their unfree cousins takes us closer to seeing just what is natural about Jean-Jacques and Emile and why Rousseau accords them the designation, "man of nature," solely for their being governed by *amour de soi* rather than *amour-propre*. They are natural because and precisely to the extent that they resist enslavement to opinion and desire. As *amour-propre* is the general cause of unnaturalness among the corrupt, *amour de soi* is the

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

general guardian of naturalness among the natural. And as enslavement to opinion and desire is the immediate source of the former's unnaturalness, freedom from the tyranny of opinion and desire is the fence immediately protecting the naturalness of the latter.40 Through this dual freedom amour de soi preserves naturalness just where amour-propre destroys it: Rather than distort perception, it preserves clear sight of reality, permitting an unbiased even if incomplete apprehension of nature; and rather than disrupt psychic equilibrium, it preserves the relative equality of faculties and desires, the primary human instance of the harmony that is nature's hallmark and the very substance of its goodness. Neither Jean-Jacques nor Emile are cave-dwellers, and though their natural predecessor may at times have taken refuge in a cave, it certainly was not in Plato's.

"WHAT IS NATURAL IN THE SAVAGE STATE" AND "WHAT IS NATURAL IN THE CIVIL STATE"

40. In Emile this freedom is the result of the successful development of virtue; he achieves what Rousseau elsewhere calls "moral freedom, which alone makes man truly the master of himself."(SC I-vii:56) See Emile V:442-46: "Up to now you were only apparently free. You had only the precarious freedom of a slave to whom nothing has been commanded. Now be really free. Learn to become you own master."(445) In Jean-Jacques, however, there is little virtue and hence just as little moral freedom. His freedom from opinion and desire is a matter not of self-mastery but of the immunity that comes with an absence of amour-propre. His freedom is an extended natural freedom rather than moral freedom.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Rousseau's principle of natural goodness is usually interpreted, correctly, as a statement about man. It is also, however, a statement about nature. Beyond establishing the naturalness of goodness (its statement about man), it also establishes the goodness of the natural: Everything natural is good. "Everything is good as it leaves the hands of the Author of things; everything degenerates in the hands of man."(Emile I:37) But what does goodness mean when applied to the universe of non-moral things, to that portion of "everything" that is not made up of civilized human beings (civilized humans being the only morally endowed pieces of creation)? In fact it means the same thing in that context as it does when applied to man, for even when ascribed to man goodness is not a moral concept (virtue, not goodness, is the moral concept, for goodness is negative and refers to inclination rather than will). Goodness can be ascribed to nothing but the universe of non-moral things. And what it means, simply, is harmonious order.41 The original natural man,

---

41. That the natural goodness of man is not a moral attribute has been widely recognized in recent scholarship. (For Rousseau's basic description of natural man's goodness, see SD, 128-31.) That the meaning of this goodness is order has been less widely noted, however. For an illuminating discussion of the meaning of nature's goodness see John T. Scott, "The Theodicy of the Second Discourse: The 'Pure State of Nature' and Rousseau's Political Thought," American Political Science Review, 86, 3 (September 1992), pp. 696-711.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

the inhabitant of the state of nature, was good both for himself and for others. Which means that he was well ordered both as a whole in himself and as a part of the larger whole: His faculties were equal to his desires and he did not interfere with the greater natural order surrounding him, including the internal order of his fellows. As a well ordered being he was able to enjoy the sweetness of existence and had no reason to keep others from the same.

But it is not only the original natural man who is good, or ordered. That description fits everything and everyone that is natural, including "the natural man living in the state of society." To the extent that he is natural he must have preserved or recreated the goodness, the order, of his infinitely simpler forebear. "Infinite" is perhaps not too strong a word to describe the distance in this regard between the original and the civilized natural men. The harmony of the former comes secure and ready-made from "the hands of the Author of things," whereas that of the latter is threatened at every turn by new acquisitions and confrontations. In the education of a civilized natural man there is so much to be balanced, so much to be delayed, so much to be shielded from. Even under the friendliest circumstances imaginable the task of maintaining naturalness is difficult beyond any realistic hope of complete success, for the real dangers -- and the

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

source of the less-than-friendly circumstances that prevail in the real world -- lie within: the chief threats to naturalness arise from the inherently ambiguous potentials embedded in the mental and emotional faculties that are (and must be) present in any civilized adult.

The difficulty of maintaining naturalness is perhaps most effectively suggested in a passage in the _Dialogues_ in which Rousseau sets out to describe his ideal world. (See I:9-13) "Picture an ideal world [_un monde ideal_] similar to ours, yet altogether different." What is it that makes this world ideal; how is it "altogether different" from ours? The difference, it turns out, is not primarily one of social circumstances. Rather, people in the ideal world are able to maintain their naturalness -- they remain good -- only because nature acts upon them more powerfully than it does upon us, in the real world.

> Nature is the same there as on our earth, but its economy is more easily felt, its order more marked, its aspect more admirable. Forms are more elegant, colors more vivid, odors sweeter, all objects more interesting. All nature is so beautiful there that its contemplation, inflaming souls with love for such a touching tableau, inspires in them both the desire to contribute to this beautiful system and the fear of troubling its harmony; and from this comes an exquisite sensitivity which gives those endowed with it immediate enjoyment unknown to hearts that the same contemplations have not aroused. . . . .
>
> The inhabitants of the ideal world I am talking about have the good fortune to be maintained by nature, to which they are more attached, in that happy perspective in which nature placed us all, and because of this alone their soul forever maintains its original character.(I:9)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

It seems that for men and women to be natural there would need to be more even than a perfect alignment of circumstances. Nature itself would have to change, at least in the degree to which it reveals its order to mankind. Only then, with its edifying harmony more pronounced than it is in our world, would people succeed in keeping to what Rousseau elsewhere calls "the road of nature" -- which, incidentally, is the same thing as "the road of happiness."(Emile V:443)

But aside from this implicit point about the difficulty of maintaining one's natural goodness, the passage raises another issue. The inhabitants of the ideal world, says Rousseau, maintain their "original character." Or, rather, "their soul maintains its original character." What this means at least in part, as he goes on to explain, is that these utopian beings are creatures of amour de soi rather than amour-propre and that they therefore have all the wholesome characteristics that follow from that good form of self-love. But the breadth of the phrase, "original character," suggests that we pursue the matter further and ask whether there is anything else, anything besides amour de soi, that might be included among the features of the "original character" that are maintained. To put it another way, does naturalness amid civilization have any further connection, any more intimate connection, with original naturalness than the fact of their shared

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

goodness or, which is the same thing, the survival of amour de soi and the attendant freedom from opinion and desire? In fact there is a critical substantive relation between the two kinds of naturalness, a relation that is more involved than just the fact of a shared set of characteristics.

"One must not confound what is natural in the savage state with what is natural in the civil state," Rousseau cautions. (Emile V:406) But neither must one overstate the difference. Not only does civilized naturalness share the goodness, the harmoniousness, of savage naturalness; civilized naturalness is also substantively informed by its savage predecessor. And the reason for this is that all the positive characteristics of the original man are present as well in modern man. The inhabitant of the state of nature was a very limited being. We who are civilized possess an enormous additional quantity of characteristics, but these additions are just that, and they overlay rather than supplant the features that the original man possessed. We are all born into the state of nature ("L'homme est ne libre": "Man was/is born free"(SC I-1:46)), even if we begin to depart from it almost immediately. One might say that "the natural man in the state of society" has within himself, like a homunculus, "the natural man in the state of nature." The harmony (the goodness) that characterizes the civilized natural man must therefore necessarily be a

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

harmony between and among the original and the acquired. The goal of a natural education is to bring one's acquired characteristics into a concordant relationship with the original ones. (This is why nature is more than a merely formal standard.) It is by virtue of this concordance that those acquired characteristics, which are by definition unnatural in the pure sense, become natural nevertheless, in the civil sense.

Harmony, indeed, but no negotiation or compromise. Nature in the pure sense is nature in its primary sense, not only historically but also conceptually. Emile could not have been imagined had the original natural man not been discovered. (It is not for nothing that Rousseau calls Emile "a savage made to inhabit cities."(III:205)) Naturalness in the civil state would be a meaningless concept without reference to naturalness in the savage state. If Rousseau seems to alternate casually between the two usages of "nature," that is because they are so intricately related, and because Emile's civilized naturalness can be neither conveyed nor comprehended without reference to nature in its pure sense.

It is instructive that, in a massive book about the education of a natural man, Rousseau never speaks in terms of actualizing or realizing nature. Instead, his vocabulary is one of cooperation or teamwork, as when he describes his task as Emile's tutor: "We work in

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

collaboration with nature, and while it forms the physical man, we try to form the moral man." (IV:314; emphasis added) This statement of educational principle testifies to the relationship between the two meanings of nature in his work. The "nature" that is explicitly spoken of here is the "nature" of the Second Discourse. This is "nature" in the pure sense, nature understood as the realm of origins -- the "nature" that does not encompass man's moral being. And yet it is only with reference to this nature -- it is only by "collaborat[ing]" with it -- that we can determine or even conceive of nature in its other, civil, sense. What makes Emile a natural man is that his formation by his tutor as a moral man accords with his formation by nature as a physical man. His acquired characteristics extend and deepen his "original dispositions."(I:39) This, and only this, is what it means to be "natural in the civil state."

Our inquiry into the meaning of nature in Rousseau's work has largely been a process of recognizing and drawing distinctions: between that which is consistent with nature and that which is not; between those who are "men of nature" and those who are not; between man and citizen; between amour de soi and amour-propre; between "the natural man living in the state of nature," or "what is natural in the savage state," on the one hand, and "the natural man

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

living in the state of society," or "what is natural in the civil state," on the other. But the final step in grasping the outlines of Rousseau's understanding of nature lies in our recognizing a certain unity. Although it is true that what is natural in one epoch may not have been so in an earlier one, the basic principles of naturalness are constant. Nature's two aspects (of which Rousseau's two usages are expressions) are aspects of a single, coherent whole.

In Emile Rousseau several times points out the distinction between the two kinds of naturalness. But in the one passage in which he formally sets out to define "nature," he makes no such distinction. There are no multiple meanings. Instead, there is a single, philosophically coherent definition which implicitly allows for a multiplicity of versions (one each for a multiplicity of epochs) and which also, again implicitly, illustrates the relationship between the two kinds of naturalness:

> We are born with the use of our senses, and from our birth we are affected in various ways by the objects surrounding us. As soon as we have, so to speak, consciousness of our sensations, we are disposed to seek or avoid the objects which produce them, at first according to whether they are pleasant or unpleasant to us, then according to the conformity or lack of it that we find between us and these objects, and finally according to the judgments we make about them on the basis of the idea of happiness or of perfection given us by reason. These dispositions are extended and strengthened as we become more capable of using our senses and more enlightened; but constrained by our habits, they are more or less corrupted by our opinions. Before this corruption they are what I call in us nature. (I:39;

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

emphasis in the original)

What is nature in man? It is his "original dispositions" ("_dispositions primitives_"), to use the phrase that Rousseau employs in the very next line to describe what he has just defined. But what "original" means, as the quoted passage indicates, is more than just what was present at birth, and more even than what was present in the adult in the state of nature. The dispositions which Rousseau here calls "nature" are at least in part the products of reason. Our judgment, our senses, our enlightenment can contribute to nature. (The "man of nature . . . behaves uniquely according to his inclinations _and his reason_."(_Dialogues_ III:214; emphasis added)) But these acquired faculties can contribute to naturalness only to the extent that they "extend[] and strengthen[]," rather than corrupt, the native dispostions. And this -- the requirement that they collaborate with what is native -- is a straightforward expression of the relationship between what is natural in the civil state and what is natural in the savage state. Whatever in us is not natural in the pure sense but strenghtens or extends what _is_, is, by virtue of this amplification, natural in the civil sense. And whoever lives according to dispositions which are extended and strengthened versions of the savage's dispositions, is, to that extent, a natural man or woman living in the state of

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

society.

We began our inquiry into Rousseau's "nature" by taking note of a paradox. Nature serves as a standard and goal in Rousseau's moral thought even though, at least in its primary sense, it does not encompass the moral realm. Rousseau seems to seek human guidance from a nonhuman source. That paradox has now been resolved, and if a certain tension still remains, that is perhaps less a reflection of Rousseau's philosophizing than of the subject of his philosophy. Nature's first meaning is indeed incapable of providing human guidance, but nature has a fuller meaning that does provide guidance even while taking its bearings from the nonhuman first meaning. But this guidance is neither easy to attain nor easy to follow. It is not a simple thing to extend and strengthen one's natural dispositions or even to know how to try to do so. Once one has left the state of nature for the civil state, nature ceases to speak very clearly -- or, which is much the same thing in its effect, one ceases to hear its voice very distinctly. And so we are told, for example, to

> [d]istrust instinct as soon as you no longer limit yourself to it. It is good as long as it acts by itself; it is suspect from the moment it operates within man-made institutions. It must not be destroyed, but it must be regulated, and that is perhaps more difficult than annihilating it. (Emile IV:333-34)

Indeed, things have reached such a pass that the

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

preservation of naturalness amid civilization requires extensive and -- if we may judge from Jean-Jacques' performance as Emile's tutor --ingenious artifice. "One must use a great deal of art to prevent social man from being totally artificial."(IV:317)

It is one thing to recognize that what is natural in the civil state is so because of its relationship with what is natural in the savage state -- that it takes its bearings from the lodestar of pure nature. But it is quite another to recognize and keep sight of that lodestar amid the crowded firmament that society places before our eyes. How Rousseau does this -- how he purports to deduce what is natural for us from what was natural for our nonhuman forebears -- is the subject to which we next must turn.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

CHAPTER THREE:

NATURE AND HUMAN NATURE, PART II:

EMILE, OR THE NATURALIZATION OF SECOND NATURE

Whatever promotes or preserves *amour de soi* -- whatever strengthens or extends it, whether directly (through the harmonious cultivation of higher faculties) or indirectly (through the limitation of *amour-propre*) -- is natural in the civil state. Such is the formula which underlies *Emile* and every other exposition of civilized naturalness that appears in Rousseau's work.1 To establish this was one of the chief purposes of the preceding chapter. But what *does* promote or preserve *amour de soi*? Or, to put the question in those terms of Rousseau which we encountered earlier, what would extend and strengthen our "original dispositions"? What is wanted is the substance with which to fill out the formula.

That substance is available to us in the person of Emile. Rousseau's *bildungsroman* is many things -- educational treatise, philosophic proof of natural goodness,

---

1. Civilized naturalness is treated most thoroughly in *Emile*, but it is also treated in the *Lettres morales*, in the idyllic portions of *La Nouvelle Heloise*, and (though with some obvious qualifications) in the depiction of Rousseau's "ideal world" in the *Dialogues*. (I:9-12)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

political commentary, romance -- but everything else that it is is subsidiary to its being Rousseau's answer to the question of how to promote and preserve _amour de soi_ in a civilized man. (That it has been seen by some as a loosely organized compendium of stories and observations surely stems from a failure to appreciate the unifying centrality of this theme.2) Little if anything about _Emile_ is superfluous from this point of view. Least of all its novelistic structure. At least two purposes are served by the book's having been written as an educational novel.

First, the novelistic form best suits the great emphasis Rousseau places on moral-psychological development as opposed to right decision-making in his moral thought. Man is a creature of passion, and his passions, as we have already seen, are ultimately informed by the quality of his self-love: not only the objects of the passions but, more important, their strength vis-à-vis his will, is determined by the extent to which _amour de soi_ has mutated into _amour-propre_ and by the specific character of that _amour-propre_. And this, the question of self-love, is predominantly a developmental matter, a matter ordinarily settled in the

2. The failure to appreciate the coherence of _Emile_ is a particular instance of the larger failure to appreciate the coherence of Rousseau's thought in general. For a survey of interpretations which explicitly claim that Rousseau's thought is self-contradictory or otherwise incoherent (and there are many more interpretations in which the claim is implicit), see Peter Gay, "Introduction" to Cassirer, _The Question of Jean-Jacques Rousseau_, pp. 3-17.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

years of childhood and youth. Without right development there is little hope of either good or virtuous behavior later in life. _With_ right development, by contrast, there is every possibility that the end product, be he man or citizen, will behave well. Hence the _bildungsroman Emile_ rather than a more conventional ethical treatise. (Even where he counsels people in whom he does not presuppose a very happy development Rousseau still aims his reformatory efforts at developing the heart rather than at convincing the mind. The goal in such cases, as evident in the _Lettres morales_, for example, is to nurture the overwhelmed but natural and therefore not quite atrophied gentle and sociable passions -- that is, to accomplish in the present at least some of the moral-psychological development that should have occurred before.)

It is the second purpose, though, which is the truly important one from a philosophic point of view. The novelistic form not only emphasizes development, it allows for a step-by-step _depiction_ of development, and such a depiction is the only means through which the meaning of civilized naturalness can be accurately conveyed. As we saw in the preceding chapter, there is no conceiving of civilized naturalness without reference to original or savage naturalness. Besides approximating the savage's psychic unity and balance, the natural man in the state of society also retains within himself the savage's positive

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

characteristics. The savage remains, as it were, within his more complex successor, much as -- or, rather, *exactly* as -- the child and youth remain within the man. Civilized naturalness (which is sociable) grows upon, if not out of, savage naturalness (which is not). Any real understanding of civilized naturalness must therefore be developmental in its approach. That is, a proper account of Rousseau's conception of what is natural in the civil state needs to be told as a story. Hence, again, the *bildungsroman* *Emile* rather than a more conventional static account. The novelistic form was not absolutely required, of course, but the only other alternative would have been something like the kind of developmental psychology texts that have appeared from within the modern academy, an alternative which would have been less worthy of Rousseau's literary artistry and less successful than *Emile* at conveying what is surely the most extraordinary and compelling teaching of the book: namely, the irreducible sublimity of the civilized savage's soul. (With this last point we have identified a third purpose served by the novelistic form.)

The novelistic form, then, permits Rousseau to give a full account of "the natural man in the state of society." *Emile*'s narrative (1) reflects the primacy of developmental considerations in Rousseau's moral thought and (2) articulates how civilized naturalness evolves out of its savage forerunner, while (3) the book's poetry conveys what

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

it is that is good about this human possibility in the first place. In performing these functions the novelistic form highlights the distinctive character of Rousseau's understanding of nature, its peculiar blend of "high" and "low," or "moral" and "physical," which distinguishes it from both ancient and modern perspectives even while evincing affinities to both.

BETWEEN ARISTOTLE AND HOBBES, BETWEEN PLATO AND FREUD: A WORD ON ROUSSEAU'S DISTINCTIVENESS

Thus far in this inquiry we have not concerned ourselves very much with Rousseau's place in intellectual history. Our focus has been more narrow, our aim, to isolate through a kind of resolutive analysis the core meaning of nature insofar as the concept applies to human beings. Now, however, as we prepare to work our way back out from the core, as it were -- as we prepare to articulate the substance of civilized naturalness by exploring how it develops out of or upon savage naturalness -- it would be useful to look at Rousseau against the backdrop of the philosophic traditions with which he contended and which would later contend with him. As we approach such questions as whether and in what sense various "higher" capacities are natural and in what sense they are related to "lower" ones (these "lower" ones

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

constituting the sum of naturalness in its primary sense), we are inevitably reminded of the changeful history of the concept of nature, and in particular the great rupture between ancient and modern understandings. Where does Rousseau stand amid the major currents of this history? It would be useful, even if it might also be somewhat perilous, to locate Rousseau's place in the story.

As many have observed and as we shall presently see, Rousseau's understanding of nature and the human good in some ways stands between the leading classical and (early) modern understandings. Standing between them does not make it a mere hybrid, however. To the contrary, Rousseau propounds a startlingly original understanding of the natural. Though he does have certain pronounced affinities with the ancients and though his understanding of nature in its pure sense is decidedly modern, his visions both of (natural) human possibilities and of the means to actualizing them are quite distinctive. And yet there is no better way to illustrate that originality than to look at his thought against the background of those other positions. Because he was so steeped in ancient and modern philosophy, because he did share a great deal of their respective impulses and assumptions (not to mention vocabulary), and because today's readers are tempted to read into Rousseau the thought of later thinkers, the surest way to approach Rousseau on his own terms is by way

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

of those positions, even including one that was formulated long after his death, with which it shares some similarities but from which it is ultimately and decisively distinct.

Students of political philosophy have devoted much attention to the intellectual revolution of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, a revolution which began with a narrowly scientific methodological discovery but which soon transformed not only our way of looking at certain kinds of things but also our way of seeing them -- indeed, our way of seeing everything, including man. The astounding success of the newly discovered scientific method at unlocking the secrets of nonhuman nature (or what Rousseau would later call the "physical" realm) gave rise to the hope -- and the hope to a tendency -- to see all problems as amenable to the explanatory and hence also to the ameliorative power of the new natural science. What this tendency inevitably entailed (and herein lies the philosophic revolution) was nothing less than the reinterpretation of the world: If problems were going to be solved by the methods of physical science, they would need to be reduced to physical terms, that is, to matter in motion. And so they were. Modernity would witness the launching of ambitious enterprises whose aim was to achieve in the social and political realms what Copernicus, Galileo

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

and Newton had achieved or were achieving in the nonhuman realm. (The most comprehensive and influential of these efforts was doubtless Hobbes'.) Society would join nature in being scientifically understood and, by grace of this, would be subject for the first time to effective, rational management. The mastery of nature would include the mastery of human nature. The Great Instauration would be complete.3

To be sure, not everyone was won over to materialism or proto-materialism. Spirituality, or freedom of the will, continued to be passionately maintained as a serious philosophic doctrine, and not just among the ecclesiastical ancien regime. Yet there was an important respect in which the scientific revolution of early modernity did produce a nearly universal change in the intellectual landscape: "Nature" was newly conceived, and this by nearly all philosophic parties, as a world of mathematized objects, as that and only that which can in principle be explained by the deterministic laws of the physical sciences. Nothing in nature, according to this new view, is impenetrable to the dissecting eye of modern science. Whatever will not yield its secrets to natural (writ:

---

3. The phrase, coined by Francis Bacon, refers to the method by which man might use science to gain mastery over nature. (See the Preface to <u>Magna Instauratio</u>.) Whether or not Bacon envisioned scientific mastery of <u>human</u> nature, others certainly did; and in so doing they effectively expanded the compass of the ideal propounded by Bacon.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

physical) science -- whatever is not reducible in principle to matter in motion -- is simply not a part of nature.

Materialists and corporealists, of course, did not concede that any supranatural realm existed -- at least not in any sense that would be meaningful to man. For them nature included everything; nothing exists in this world whose behavior is not in principle explainable by the deterministic laws of natural science. But even those who did not accept materialism accepted the new mechanistic conception of nature. That which eludes the explanatory power of mechanistic science -- namely, human and/or divine will -- was seen as existing apart from nature. Thus while the two camps disagreed about the reality of nonmechanistic phenomena, they did not disagree about the meaning of "nature." Nor, one might add, did they disagree about nature's supposed silence on moral matters: Understood as the realm of objective necessity, nature can tell us much about how things are but nothing about what they, or what we, ought to be; that kind of knowledge (or belief) would have to come from some other source. The terms of the debate were remarkably widely accepted by the time Rousseau's century dawned. What was at issue was "only" the scope of the natural realm, not its defining characteristics.[4]

This redefinition of nature marked a momentous break with the dominant philosophic tradition of the preceding

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

centuries. To be sure, there had been strands of thought both in classical antiquity and in the Christian Middle Ages which can fairly be seen as having anticipated or in some other way prepared the ground for the modern conception of nature. Greek thought especially had seen tremendous variety on all important questions. And for all the ecclesiastically enforced orthodoxy of the Middle Ages, there was still significant diversity among late medieval thinkers on questions as fundamental as the nature and scope of divine will.5 Nevertheless during the many centuries preceding the scientific revolution there was a dominant understanding of nature and man's relation to it, and that understanding was something very different from the one which Galileo, Bacon and Descartes consciously and even polemically promulgated as a superior replacement.

This old way of understanding nature, like so much else in the prevailing philosophic thought of the late Middle Ages, derived from an outlook that is best described

---

4. Nor have the terms of the debate been very successfully challenged in subsequent generations. What was at issue in the seventeenth century has continued to be at issue, and what was no longer at issue -- the nature of nature, so to speak -- has largely remained thus. (It remains to be seen whether today's post-modernists or champions of pre-modern traditions will succeed in overturning this most characteristic feature of modern thought.) For a brief but incisive summary of the matter, see Leon Kass, The Hungry Soul: Eating and the Perfecting of Our Nature (New York: The Free Press, 1994), pp. 3-9.

---

5. The rift between nominalism and scholasticism is perhaps the preeminent example of theological pluralism.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

as Christianized Aristotelianism. Nature, according to this view, both includes human beings and is teleological. The result of this combination was that nature was seen as a legitimate (apart from Scripture, the *only* legitimate) source of moral guidance. Far from mastery, what was wanted was a life lived in *accordance* with nature, with accordance understood as the realization of the universal, natural human potential for one or another form of a life of logos.[6] Certainly there was no questioning the naturalness of the highest human capacities. Under the modern regime the higher capacities would either be reduced to yet-to-be understood manifestations of matter and motion or else be interpreted as nonnatural phenomena. Prior to the modern reconceptualization, though, reason and freedom were considered natural not only because they are innate capacities but also, and even more so, because they are the instruments most necessary for the realization of the natural human potential. For Aristotle and his followers, we might say, the higher capacities were natural precisely because they *are* higher.

Where, on this philosophic battleground, do we find Rousseau?

We seem to find him on both sides of the divide:

6. "Logos," whether understood in its classical sense (as reason) or its Christian sense (as the Word), was expressive of a natural moral order.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Rousseau in part accepts and even radicalizes the modern truncation of nature while nevertheless maintaining the naturalness of what he understands to be the highest human capacities. He both extends and repudiates the modern tendency. He extends it by denying the naturalness of anything that did not exist in the state of nature. Man in the state of nature -- for which we may substitute, "man by nature" -- is pre-rational and pre-moral. Nature has been reduced so far as to exclude everything that most of us recognize as distinctively human. Yet Rousseau also repudiates this very tendency to truncate nature by presenting the superlatively human Emile and Jean-Jacques as exemplars of naturalness. In this he seems to be holding with the premoderns' more inclusive and less mechanistic conception of nature. He is able to move in these two directions simultaneously because he holds a conception of nature that embraces two parts, namely, that which is natural in the savage state and that which is natural in the civil state. And he is able to do this successfully because, as we shall see, the two parts fit together coherently. Indeed, the genius of Rousseau's view lies precisely in its integration of these two parts -- or, to put it another way, in its articulation of how the high evolves out of the low without being reducible to it.

A geometric analogy might be the best means of representing Rousseau's apparent mid-way position between

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

the Aristotelian and early modern (Baconian, Cartesian, Hobbesian) conceptions of nature. Aristotelian nature can be aptly represented as a pyramid or an equalateral triangle whose peak stands for the higher human faculties, the proper use of man's higher faculties being nature's highest expression.7 The modern conception of nature, accordingly, would be most accurately pictured as a truncated pyramid, or trapezoid. What for Aristotle was the peak of nature was now denied natural status; spirituality, if its existence was conceded at all, was removed to the *super*natural realm. Keeping with this scheme, we might represent Rousseau's more complicated conception of nature as a trapezoid which is even more squat or truncated than that of the early moderns but upon which rests a triangle drawn in broken lines, a triangle which, combined with the trapezoid, makes up a pyramid after all. The solid lines encompass that which is natural in the savage state, the broken lines that which is natural in the civil state.8 That the latter should be represented by broken lines is appropriate for at least two reasons. First, that which is natural in the civil state was historically, and is developmentally, secondary to original nature. But even more than that, it is logically secondary as well: in order for the higher human capacities to meet the criteria of naturalness in any sense, they must preserve the harmony of nature in its primary sense; and

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

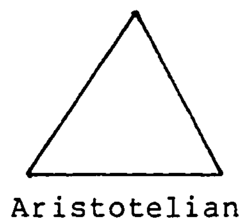
for this to be the case, the developmental direction of these higher faculties must in effect be continuous with, or projected from, that which is natural in the savage state.

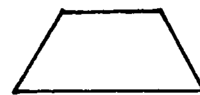
However simplistically, the geometric analogy illustrates the affinities between Rousseau's idea of nature and those of the Aristotelians and the early moderns. It illustrates Rousseau's acceptance of both a modern, truncated view of nature (which he designates as that which is natural in the savage state, or in the pure sense) and a more vertically inclusive view as well (which he designates as that which is natural in the civil state). We must be careful, however, not to invest the geometric analogy with more meaning than it can bear. What it expresses are _affinities_ between Rousseau's view and the others, not absolute likenesses. In adopting as his conception of what is natural in the savage or primary sense a very limited, truncated realm of human (perhaps one

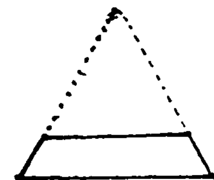
---

7. Nature's highest production is the well formed human being: "man is the best of the animals when completed." Aristotle, _Politics_, Book I, Chapter Two (1253a31-31).

8.


Aristotelian


Modern


Rousseauan

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

even ought to say, animal) capacities, Rousseau is indeed close to his modern predecessors and contemporaries; and where he differs from them in this it is because he goes even further than they, is even more modern than those moderns, as it were. But when he extends the designation, "natural," to what he recognizes as the higher expressions of humanity -- when he reappropriates the rest of the pyramid for nature -- he is not as close to the Aristotelians as one might have first suspected or as the analogy might seem to have suggested.

Although Rousseau does in effect repudiate the moderns' exclusion of the higher capacities from the realm of nature and in so doing does indeed evince an affinity to the older, Aristotelian view, the particular capacities which Rousseau considers man's naturally highest -- his notion of that which constitutes the peak of the pyramid -- is not the same as that which constitutes the peak of the Aristotelian pyramid. In short, whereas nature's peak is for Aristotle a life of reason, a life characterized at its very highest by the practice of philosophy, for Rousseau nature's peak is the enlarged feeling of existence that is achieved by the development of advanced cognitive and emotional capacities in such a way as to extend and deepen _amour de soi_. What for Aristotle is defined as an intellectual attainment is for Rousseau a sentimental one. What is sublime for Rousseau -- and the sublime _is_ natural,

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

as we shall see -- are certain kinds of feelings. To be more specific, feelings of love: love of the good, love of virtue, love of beauty -- love of anything or anyone that embodies these things.

I introduced the comparisons with Aristotle and the early moderns in order to position us to appreciate the distinctiveness of Rousseau's view concerning the naturalness of what I have been calling the "higher" human capacities. As I have just remarked, though, part of what is distinctive about Rousseau's view is the very meaning and nature of "the high." Thus we have reached the boundary beyond which these comparisons lose their illustrative power. Hobbes, for all the severity of his rejection of Aristotle, at least shared with him the conviction that the exercise of reason at its highest, which is to say philosophy, is the most elevated and rewarding of all activities. (Those "voluptuous men" who neglect philosophy, wrote Hobbes, do so "only because they know not how great a pleasure it is to the mind of man to be ravished in the vigorous and perpetual embraces of the most beauteous world."9) The quarrel between ancients and early moderns concerned the <u>status</u> of the high -- is it natural? is it reducible to physical properties or

9. Sir William Molesworth, ed., <u>The English Works of Thomas Hobbes</u>, 11 vols. (London, 1839-1845), vol. 1, "Epistle to the Reader."

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

activities? -- more than its content. And so Rousseau's reconceptualization of the sublime ultimately places him apart from, rather than between, Aristotle and the early moderns.

Fortunately, though, just as we reach the limits of the usefulness of the comparisons with Aristotle and Hobbes, another set of comparisons suggests itself which promises to be even more illuminating. As we prepare to consider the question of sublimity, and with it the phenomenon known today as sublimation, we recall the two figures, again one ancient and one modern, who offer the most comprehensive (secular) accounts of the soul's elevation to the sublime. Plato and Freud present us with an even more perfect opposition than Aristotle and his modern critics, and one which, as a backdrop, throws Rousseau's distinctiveness into even sharper relief.

Plato and Freud offer competing accounts of how an individual can ascend from experiencing base desires to a more elevated state. Each tells of an upward channeling of psychic energy, a channeling that simultaneously reduces gross indulgence of the appetites and produces the finer things of life. Each holds, further, that this channeling cannot be taken for granted, at least not very much of it; some sort of education is needed to ensure that the process occurs. But they contradict one another almost perfectly

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

with regard to the precise nature of this channeling. What we have, indeed, are nearly diametrically opposed accounts of how, on what basis, and with what effect human desire -- and with desire, behavior -- can be elevated. Or, to put it another way, what we have are opposing accounts, one teleological and the other materialistic, of the very phenomenon which Rousseau explains as the emergence of nature's higher aspect (that which is natural in the civil state) from its lower, animal aspect.

Rousseau's psychology does not match up as neatly with either Plato's or Freud's as those two do with one another: for Rousseau there is no tripartition of the soul, for example. In fact he nowhere explicitly lays out a comprehensive theory of moral and psychological development, at least not systematically. But Rousseau does join Plato and Freud in providing an account of the elevation of desire from low to high. And while the substance of the high is neither Platonic nor Freudian nor exactly in between, the character of the elevation, the process by which the soul ascends toward sublimity, can be understood -- indeed, can best be understood -- with reference to the two more famous teachings.

Let us look first at Plato. From several dialogues -- most especially the Republic, the Symposium and the Phaedrus -- there emerges a comprehensive and largely consistent account of the process of spiritual elevation.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

According to this account the lower desires (e.g., wanton lusts for sex and power), are the result of ignorance. They are the result of a misapprehension of what one really wants, in that they stem from a misunderstanding of what alone would truly make one happy. (As for moderate and lawful bodily appetites, they too derive much of their power from ignorance, though they do have a legitimacy that their immoderate counterparts lack.) Socrates' foremost educational task in the _Republic_ is to convince Glaucon that what the young man takes to be thymotic or political desires (desires for honor and glory) are in fact longings of a higher variety. It is the Good that he, indeed that each of us, wants.[10] The Good is not only the highest thing but also the most real -- which means that desire for the Good, however idealistic it may sound, is in a fundamental sense the most realistic of desires. To the extent that one's eros is directed toward objects lower than the Good, or lower than the Form Beauty, which is so to speak the face of the Good as it appears to those who behold it,[11] one will be less than fully satisfied. Not only social peace but individual fulfillment as well requires an elevation of desire, and the higher the better.

---

10. _Republic_ 505d-e.

---

11. The status of Beauty varies among the dialogues. In the _Symposium_ -- specifically, in Socrates' recounting of Diotima's discourse -- Beauty and the Good are treated as nearly synonomous. In the _Republic_, by contrast, Beauty is not so elevated.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

As baseness is a result of ignorance, elevation proceeds as a consequence of learning. Through lengthy and difficult education, an education possible in its fullest measure only for a few, one's desires are made to progress upward, rung by rung, from more limited and less real objects to greater and more real ones. This ascent requires both discipline and intellectual apprehension. Discipline is required in order to keep the yet-to-be elevated energy of desire from being spent in the pursuit of lower objects. The soul has only so much energy, and the direction of this energy, this eros, toward any one object necessarily reduces the amount available for others: "[W]e surely know," says Socrates in the _Republic_, "that when someone's desires incline strongly to some one thing, they are therefore weaker with respect to the rest, like a stream that has been channeled off in that other direction."[12] The agent of this discipline is _thymos_, the soul's spirited part. Above _thymos_, though, directing it in its work of negativity even while beholding the superiority of higher objects and so laying hold of the next rungs on the "ladder of love,"[13] is the soul's

12. 485d.

13. The "ladder of love," or "scala amoris," is, I think, an apt description of the universe of erotic possibilities described by Diotima. It should be remembered, however, that the phrase is an invention of scholars; it is to them, not Plato, that the necessary quotation marks refer.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

reasoning part. Reason is thus the hero of the story. Reason both governs appetitive behavior (through its agent, *thymos*) and performs the positive work of intellectual apprehension. The latter task proceeds as a series of ascending recognitions. Reason recognizes, first, that a particular body is beautiful; then, that bodily beauty as such is more worthy of love than any particular body; then, that the beauty of souls is greater than bodily beauty; and then that the beauty of knowledge is greater still, until finally one has become a true philosopher, loving wisdom and Beauty as such.[14] It is unclear whether the objects met on the lower rungs lose all their attraction as one climbs the ladder,[15] but what is clear is that the main force of one's desire gets directed at the objects encountered on the highest rung to which one has attained; for these higher objects are not only more attractive, they are more attractive precisely because they are truer instances of the very quality that was attractive in the lower objects.

What Plato describes as desire's ascent is called by Freud sublimation (*sublimieren*). "Sublimation" has more than one meaning even within the realm of moral psychology.

---

14. *Symposium* 210a-212b.

15. Gerasimos Santas notes that this has been a bone of much interpretive contention. See *Plato and Freud: Two Theories of Love* (New York: Basil Blackwell, 1988), pp. 42 and 56, no. 45.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

In its broadest sense it denotes the phenomenon of upward channeling without any presupposition that the lower is either the truer or the more natural state of desire.16 Employed in that sense, it would be a fair label for the process described by Plato. But this is not the sense of the word as it is used by Freud, or, for that matter, by those such as Nietzsche who preceded him in using the term.17 For Freud sublimation means converting desire that is originally and (therefore) naturally low -- meaning, for him, lawless and lustful -- into higher feelings -- specifically, into love of such things as beautiful objects and abstract ideas. Used in this narrower sense, sublimation is not an accurate label for the process that Plato describes. (When Freud nevertheless does seem to apply the term in its narrow sense to Plato's account it is because, following the lead of some less than careful colleagues, he misreads Plato as a proto-Freudian.18)

Far from following Plato, Freud reverses him in perhaps the most fundamental respect. Platonic sublimation

---

16. See entry 5.a. under "sublimation" in the Oxford English Dictionary (Second Edition, vol. XVII (Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1989).

17. For some elaboration on the history of the word and concept see Walter Kaufmann, Nietzsche: Philosopher, Psychologist, Antichrist, Fourth Edition (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1974), pp. 211-56.

18. The colleagues were Nachmansohn and Pfister. See Santas, pp. 154-57, for a brief account of Freud's reading of Plato. That Freud is wrong in his reading of Plato is my view, not Santas'.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

is the upward channeling of what by nature ought to be high; it is a process wherein education leads to a going-up to nature, to a more real and hence more satisfying level of desire. For Freud, by contrast, sublimation is a necessary and expedient but less than happy escape from nature; it is necessary because what is natural would kill us, or at least most of us, but it is ultimately sad because this kind of deflection of desire's true aims can yield at best only secondary, substitutive satisfaction.[19] Sublimation is the program of the reality principle, a principle born of the resigned recognition that pleasure is not our lot.

Another major difference between the two psychologies, related to the first, should also be noted. Just as

19. Freud offers this assessment in Civilization and Its Discontents: "[A] technique for fending off suffering is the employment of the displacements of libido which our mental apparatus permits of and through which its function gains so much in flexibility. The task here is that of shifting the instinctual aims in such a way that they cannot come up against frustration from the external world. In this, sublimation of the instincts lends its assistance. One gains the most if one can sufficiently heighten the yield of pleasure from the sources of psychical and intellectual work. When that is so, fate can do little against one. A satisfaction of this kind, such as an artist's joy in creating, in giving his phantasies body, or a scientist's in solving problems or discovering truths, has a special quality which we shall certainly one day be able to characterize in meta-psychological terms. At present we can only say figuratively that such satisfactions seem 'finer and higher.' But their intensity is mild as compared with that derived from the sating of crude and primary instinctual impulses; it does not convulse our physical being. (James Strachey, trans. and ed. (New York: W.W. Norton and Company, 1961), p. 28)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Freud's tripartition of the soul corresponds to Plato's (ego to reason, superego to spiritedness, id to the appetites), so his account of the mechanism of sublimation parallels Plato's account. Where for Plato sublimation is a project directed by reason and employing spiritedness, for Freud it is directed by the ego and engages the assistance of the superego. Yet whereas for Plato all three parts of the soul are natural and, presumably, innate, for Freud neither the ego nor the superego is natural or innate. The ego develops only in response to the frustration of the id's desires, while the superego is altogether a cultural product. Neither of sublimation's active parties is innate or natural, which underscores, if any underscoring is needed, how weak is the connection between satisfaction and the sublime -- and how weak, therefore, is the resemblance between Freud and Rousseau.

For Freud, the true exemplar of modern science as it considers the soul, sublimation, however glorious, is still a distant second best: it may be the best practicable psychic regime, but it falls far short of the undoctored pleasures of instinctual satisfaction. For Rousseau, by contrast, sublimity, as experienced for example in the contemplation of moral beauty, inspires "involuntary transports," "noble delirium," "holy enthusiasm," and "those sublime strayings which elevate us into the empyrean next to God himself"(<u>LM</u>, 1101) -- hardly the grim stuff of

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

the reality principle.

Rousseau is closer to Plato than to Freud, then, and not only in the fact of their shared poetic philosophizing. Though not a Platonist, Rousseau gives an account of sublimation whose essence, as we shall presently see, has significant affinities to Plato's. Though his notion of what constitutes sublimity is distinctive and resists comparison either to Plato or to Freud, and though there is no corresponding tripartition of the soul, Rousseau provides an account according to which sublimation is in a real sense natural and, consequently, a great gain for the individual in whom it takes place. For Rousseau there is no question of secondary, substitutive satisfaction: Nothing is as deeply gratifying, nothing is as eudaimonistically rewarding, as experiencing the sublime. And as for the psychic agents of sublimation, they, as we shall also see, though not active in the original natural man, are nevertheless natural. In these respects Rousseau's account leans toward Plato's and away from Freud's. Ultimately, though, Rousseau's account veers away from Plato's as well. To cite the most significant divergences, (1) Rousseau defines the sublime in sentimental rather than ontological terms and (2) he locates not just the energy but also something of the basic pattern of sublimity on the lowest, most primal rung of the ladder: Although the high is not reducible to the low, it

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

is informed by it. The state of nature never ceases to be a source of standards for judging even the most advanced human beings. Origins persist -- not only positively but also normatively.

Thus in the end the Platonic and Freudian accounts are useful to our understanding of Rousseau less as opposing poles of a continuum than as positions by which to gauge the full measure of Rousseau's distinctiveness.

SUBLIMATION IN ROUSSEAU: CONSCIENCE AS ALCHEMIST

Although the term itself never appears in Rousseau's works, sublimation has been increasingly recognized as key to his understanding of healthy human development. Whether the precise nature of the process has been as well understood, however, is somewhat more doubtful. Even the best interpretations have tended to miss one or another of the features that together comprise the peculiar character of Rousseauan sublimation.

No one has shed more light on the meaning and significance of sublimation in Rousseau's thought than Allan Bloom. Yet even Bloom's interpretation requires some correction. When Bloom writes that "[s]ublimation as the source of the soul's higher expressions . . . was introduced to the world by Rousseau,"[20] he is using

20. "Introduction," pp. 15-16.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

"sublimation" in its narrower and more common sense. According to Bloom, Rousseau's discovery of sublimation provided him with the means to escape the reductive implications of the modern understanding of nature:

> Rousseau's attempt to comprehend the richness of man's soul within the context of modern scientific reductionism led him to an interpretation which is still our way of looking at things although we have lost clarity about its intention and meaning. Rousseau knew that there are sublime things; he had inner experience of them. He also knew that there is no place for the sublime in the modern scientific explanation of man. Therefore, the sublime had to be made out of the nonsublime; this is sublimation. It is a raising of the lower to the higher. . . .
>
> [The] last two books of *Emile* then undertake in a detailed way the highly problematic task of showing how the higher might be derived from the lower without being reduced to it, while at the same time giving us some sense of what Rousseau means by the sublime or noble.21

This interpretation is worth special notice because it rightly and uniquely understands sublimation to be the key to Rousseau's vision of everything that is fine or excellent in man. It rightly locates the source of love and of virtue, the source of compassion and nobility, in the elevation of what begins as undifferentiated sexual desire. Ultimately, though, this interpretation goes astray in an important respect.

Bloom is correct in maintaining that Rousseau believed in the existence of sublime things, and that he did so based on his own inner experience. He is also correct in noting that Rousseau found "the modern scientific

---

21. Ibid., p. 16.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

explanation of man" unable to account or even make room for the sublime. But he errs in interpreting the nature of Rousseau's predicament and solution. Rousseau does indeed propound sublimation as the means by which one achieves spiritual heights: Higher attachments arise directly from the transformation, the elevation, of mere bodily appetite. But the sublimation Rousseau describes is not sublimation in the narrow sense. Rather, it is sublimation in the broad sense, sublimation in the sense that includes the kind of elevation of desire that Socrates seeks to promote in Glaucon. Sublimation in the narrow sense refers to "the sublime [being] made out of the nonsublime"; there is nothing naturally sublime in man, according to this view, and so sublimation is not natural. The upward transformation of desire as Rousseau describes it, though, _is_ natural. And it is so because it is accomplished through the agency of the one psychic element which is both innate (i.e. natural in a very strict sense) and sublime: namely, conscience.22

Conscience, as we shall presently see, is the source of all that is sublime in human beings. And conscience is fully a part of our natural, our _innate_ or original, endowment. Bloom's error, then, is to assume that Rousseau

---

22. Although, being innate, conscience is natural in a very strict sense, it cannot be considered natural in the strictest, or pure, sense, since it was not active in the pure state of nature.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

fully accepted the modern scientific understanding of man. In fact Rousseau did <u>not</u> "attempt to comprehend the richness of man's soul within the context of modern scientific reductionism." There is much in the modern view to which Rousseau did subscribe. And, indeed, as we have repeatedly noted, there are important respects in which he went even further in reducing nature than his predecessors had (his subtraction of reason and sociability from the catalogue of man's original natural characteristics, for example). But his insistence upon the naturalness, <u>the primary naturalness</u>, of conscience -- his insistence that a sublime inner force exists in every human heart -- removes him from the camp of modern reductionists. "[H]e . . . knew that there is no place for the sublime in the modern scientific explanation of man." Indeed. But as he did not fully subscribe to that explanation in the first place, he did not need to postulate the derivation of the sublime from strictly nonsublime sources.

The essence of Rousseau's view is that, strengthened by a natural education, the one thing that is sublime from the start (that is, conscience) transforms animal sexual energy into such elevated phenomena as compassion, romantic love, conjugal love, friendship, taste, sensibility and virtue.23

Before turning to the particulars of sublimation, to

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

the questions of what is sublime and how sublimation occurs, let us first be sure that we understand what it is that sublimation accomplishes, that is, what the problem is to which sublimation stands as the solution.

Sublimation does not explain the appearance of higher mental _faculties_. As we have seen in an earlier chapter, the higher faculties, whether cognitive or emotional, are awakened from natural latency by a certain confluence of circumstances. What are customarily called the "acquired" faculties are in fact not so much acquired as they are stimulated into development, like seeds that are watered.24 What sublimation refers to is nothing so morally neutral. Rather, what it explains is the wholesome, which is to say either good or virtuous, development of sentiment.

As part of a natural education such as Emile's, sublimation explains how man's higher capacities, those which in the pure sense are unnatural, can be made natural after all. That is, it explains how his higher capacities can be made (1) to extend and/or deepen _amour de soi_ and (2) to shape _amour-propre_ in such a way as to make it the source of loving rather than irascible social passions.25 Sublimation is the mechanism whereby morally neutral sexual energy becomes morally laudable love. It is the mechanism whereby higher sentiment is produced. And as it is sentiment which shapes the rest of man, the sublimation of sexuality ensures, as much as anything can, the proper

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

development and employment of all his faculties and capacities, sentimental and nonsentimental alike. Thus sublimation is centrally responsible for the development of "the natural man in the state of society."(Emile III:205)

Sublimation did not occur in the state of nature.

---

23. In this, sublimation bears an interesting resemblance to another kind of alchemy depicted in Emile, namely, its account of the origins of the sense of rightful possession (or what is called "a sort of property" in the Second Discourse (146)), an account which Rousseau borrows from Locke's account of the origins of property in the state of nature.(Emile II: 98-99; Locke, Second Treatise of Government, Chapter Five) Just as the sense of rightful possession is created by mixing what is by nature one's own (that is, one's labor) with what belongs to no one (the common), so sublimation occurs through the mixing of what by nature is sublime (that is, conscience) with what is not sublime. In both cases the active element (labor, conscience) so enriches the acted-upon elements (raw materials of the earth, raw materials of the psyche) that they, the latter, become kin to the former: what had been unowned becomes rightful private possession and what had been submoral becomes sublime, the transformation occurring in both cases by virtue of the near-infinite addition of value by the active element. (A major difference between Rousseau's account and Locke's is that, for Rousseau, labor only establishes a sense of rightful possession, not property. The creation of property requires consent. Rousseau's debt to Locke's account of the origins of property is also evident in the Second Discourse, p. 154.)

---

24. Nature, Rousseau writes, gives man "with immediacy only the desires necessary to his preservation and the faculties sufficient to satisfy them. It put all the others, as it were, in reserve in the depth of his soul, to be developed there when needed."(Emile II:80; emphasis added) See Chapter Two, pages 83-87, below.

---

25. In fact sublimation is not unique to a natural education. It occurs as part of a denaturalizing, civic education as well, and it accomplishes much the same thing in the citizen as in the natural man, albeit within a different context: the citizen, too, is a devoted family man. In him, too, sexuality has acquired a moral dimension.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

(Conscience speaks only to those in whom reason has developed. (_Emile_ I:67; _Beaumont_, 935-36)) It therefore explains much of the difference between the different kinds of natural men. But the difference that it most explains is not the one between Emile and the original natural man but rather the one between Emile and his unnatural counterparts in civilization. _Sublimation makes for the whole difference between civilized goodness and corruption_. It is the means to the naturalization of second nature.

Now let us look at Rousseauan sublimation proper. We begin with an examination of conscience, the key to the whole enterprise.

The reason that conscience can do so much for Rousseau is that it _is_ so much. A careful reading reveals that conscience, _la conscience_ -- this is a word he does use -- plays an even larger and more decisive role in Rousseau's understanding of a well-developed person than reason does in Plato's. On its face Rousseauan conscience seems not so different from a certain conventional understanding of conscience. Conscience has long been understood as a moral sense, an inner source of moral judgment which expresses approval and disapproval through a variety of feeling-states. Conscience on this view is thought to be universal, at least in its more general output. (While people, and peoples, differ in many specific moral

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

judgments, everyone except the psychopath knows, for example, that murder and theft are wrong.) And so it is for Rousseau. Conscience for him is an innate, universal source of moral guidance and judgement. Basing his view to a significant degree on his own experience, Rousseau concluded that conscience is an active and articulate even if somewhat timid force. It prescribes general rules of conduct and even provides the individual with detailed guidance before he acts; and it repays him accordingly -- that is, justly -- with either contentment or distress, afterwards and for a long time to come.26

That Rousseau's best known discourse on conscience comes from the mouth of a character, the Savoyard Vicar, whose basic philosophic views differ in some respects from Rousseau's own does not count against the present interpretation.27 For while the Vicar's Profession is the most famous of Rousseau's discussions of conscience, it is not his only one. And those other disquisitions -- most notably the _Lettres morales_ but also numerous passages in several other works, including _Emile_ -- do not differ fundamentally from the Vicar's account on any of the points that we have so far noted. Wherever they appear, in whoever's mouth they are placed and to whomever they are addressed, Rousseau's discussions of conscience consistently portray it as a universal, active, inner force for good.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Thus we read, for example -- and each of these passages appears someplace other than the Vicar's Profession -- that "[t]here is . . . at the bottom of all souls an innate principle of justice and moral virtue anterior to all national prejudices and to all the maxims

---

26. Few interpreters would dispute the accuracy of this description. What has been disputed, however, is the universality of conscience's principle(s) over time -- a challenge which goes, if not to the accuracy, certainly to the significance of this description. Horowitz, for example, sees Rousseau as rejecting the "ahistoricity" of conscience. Rousseau's nature, he maintains, does express itself through conscience, but the promptings of conscience are as much the product of history as of nature; nature does not express or manifest itself except through a medium that has been fundamentally shaped by history. (See Rousseau, Nature, and History, pp. 42-46.) This interpretation of Rousseau, needless to say, is very much at odds with the one propounded here. Whereas Horowitz elevates history to the prime place in Rousseau's philosophic anthropology, my reading of Rousseau finds history to be a force which interacts with but does not fundamentally determine the substance of nature. History, in my view, can work in consonance with nature by awakening its hitherto dormant aspects; and it can work at cross purposes with nature, by overlaying its always benign manifestations with corruption and distortion. But nature, in the interpretation advanced here, is in its essence untouched and untouchable by history. Thus conscience, nature's voice, is in _its_ essence independent of history. The voice may vary in richness and resonance according to the varying levels of moral and intellectual development among people, but the basic principle underlying conscience's messages is always the same, as we shall see in the coming pages.

---

27. Some interpreters -- Pierre-Maurice Masson and Maurice Cranston, for example -- regard the Vicar's profession as Rousseau's own. (See Masson, _La religion de J.-J. Rousseau_, 3 vols. (Paris: Plon, 1916), and Cranston, pp. 321, 348 and 197 n.: "the 'Profession of Faith' was very much a profession of his own faith.") Indeed, Rousseau gives us ample reason to think that a good part of the Vicar's Profession does represent his own outlook. See _Reveries_ III:34-35.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

of education. . . . [I]t is to this principle that I give the name of conscience." (LM 1108)28 And that "[t]his first sketch is not drawn by the hand of man but is graven in our hearts by the Author of all justice."(Emile II:100n.) And this: "A rule prior to opinion exists for the whole human species. It is to the inflexible direction of this rule that all the others ought to be related. . . . This rule is the inner sentiment." (Emile V:382)

Conscience lay dormant in the original natural man; it requires a certain degree of reason or enlightenment in order to be awakened.(Emile I:67; Beaumont, 935-36) Once awakened, though, it can never be completely stifled: "The most corrupt souls wouldn't be able to lose completely this first inclination: the thief who robs passersby nevertheless covers the nakedness of the poor." Such, at least, is the position taken in the Lettres morales.(1107) The line taken in the Dialogues, written during a prolonged period of personal distress that seems to have included an element of paranoia, is somewhat more bleak. But not utterly so:

> Those innate feelings that nature has engraved in

---

28. (a) I take "moral virtue" in this instance as a reference to both goodness and virtue. Although the distinction between goodness and virtue is real and important, Rousseau sometimes uses "virtue" in a more general everyday sense, especially in works whose intended audience is comprised of the general reading public rather than philosophers. See note 58 below for another example of this usage.

(b) The same line appears with only minor alteration in the Vicar's Profession.(IV:290)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

all hearts to console man in his misery and encourage him to virtue can easily, by means of art, intrigues, and sophisms, become stifled in individuals; but soon reborn in the generations that follow, they will always bring man back to his primitive dispositions, just as the seed of a grafted tree always reproduces the wild stock. This inner feeling that our philosophers recognize when it suits them and reject when it is inconvenient for them makes its way through the mistakes of reason, and cries out to all hearts that justice has another foundation than life's interest, and that the moral order, about which nothing here below gives us any idea, has its seat in a different system that is sought in vain on earth but to which everything must someday return. The voice of conscience can no more be stifled in the human heart than that of reason can be stifled in the understanding; and moral insensitivity is as unnatural as madness.(III:242)29

Even if conscience is extinguishable in individuals, says the Rousseau of the Dialogues, it will always be part of human beings' innate endowment.

The consolation of conscience to which Rousseau refers is no mean thing. A good conscience is one of only three real needs: "Take away strength, health, and good witness of oneself, all the goods of this life are in opinion; take away the pains of the body and the remorse of conscience, all our ills are imaginary."(Emile II:81) Accordingly, the pleasures of a good conscience outlast and far outweigh the foregone pleasures that might have been purchased in violation of conscience: "the sacrifices made to honesty and justice compensate me every day for what they cost me

29. In the Second Discourse Rousseau makes a similar claim in behalf of natural pity. "[T]he most depraved morals," he says, "still have difficulty in destroying" it.(131) (Natural pity, as we shall see, is a part of conscience.)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

one time, and [in return] for brief privations they give me eternal delights."(LM 1103) Indeed, the pleasures of conscience are so great -- and the pain of remorse so persistent -- that the just are rewarded with as deep and lasting a happiness as human beings can realistically hope for. Each of us, Rousseau writes the Comtesse d'Houdetot, knows from experience the pain of remorse,

> and one would like to efface this involuntary sentiment which gives us so much torment. But let us obey nature -- we will know with what sweetness it approves what it has commanded and what charm one finds in tasting the inner peace of a soul content with itself. The wicked man fears and runs from himself, he cheers himself up by casting himself outside of himself, he casts his anxious eyes about himself and seeks an object which will make him laugh -- without the insulting raillery he would always be sad; on the contrary the serenity of the just man is interior, his laughter is not from malignity but from joy, he carries the source of it in himself. He is as gay alone as in the midst of company; and this unalterable contentment that one sees reigning in him, he does not draw it from those who approach him, he communicates it to them.(LM 1107)

To follow the promptings of the inner voice, says Rousseau, "is my whole philosophy and, I believe, the whole art of being happy that is practicable for man."(LM 1104-05) Rousseau's is a position which, if true, surely satisfies Glaucon's famous demand: goodness (or justice, to use Glaucon's term) leads to happiness and so is its own, incomparably great, reward.30 Obviously this great truth remains hidden from the vast majority of civilized men, for

---

30. Glaucon's challenge to Socrates appears at Republic 361a-d.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

whom the siren songs of interest and passion seem to promise happiness while the delight in goodness seems a hopelessly threadbare myth: "Consider that to delight in doing good is the reward for having done good, and that one does not obtain it before having merited it. Nothing is more kind than virtue but it does not show itself thus except to those who possess it."(LM, 1117)

As all of these quoted remarks indicate, Rousseau sees in conscience much the same thing that Jews and Christians and others have seen in it, especially since the Protestant Reformation. There is nothing unique in his postulating an innate moral sense. But he sees in this moral sense much more than others do. Conscience to him is all that it is for them and then some. And in that, in the range of its functions and in its developmental significance, Rousseau's conception is indeed unique. Or so I hope to demonstrate.

Let us consider the following psalmodic passage from the Fifth of the Lettres morales. "Conscience, conscience," sings Rousseau,

> divine instinct, immortal and celestial voice, certain guide of a being that is ignorant and limited but intelligent and free, infallible judge of good and bad, sublime emanation of eternal substance who renders man like unto the Gods; it is you alone who makes the excellence of my nature.
>
> Without you I sense nothing in myself which elevates me above the beasts except for the sad privilege of wandering from error to error with the help of an understanding without rule and a reason without principle. (LM, 1111)31

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Rousseau is justly famous for the passion of his rhetoric. Few writers within any discipline can match the emotional expressiveness of his prose. But the passion of his rhetoric should not be taken to mean that he is exaggerating, that he does not quite mean all that he says -- and least of all when he makes categorical, philosophic statements such as the ones quoted above.32 We may therefore take Rousseau at his word in the passage quoted above, a passage which reveals to us something of the full meaning and significance of conscience in his thought.

Several elements of that peaen are worth our notice, beginning with the sustained reference to divinity. The chief effect of stressing conscience's status as "divine instinct" or "emanation of eternal substance" is to underscore its perfection and its power. (A similar effect

---

31. Parts of this passage are repeated almost verbatim by the Savoyard Vicar.(IV:290) The most notable difference: the Vicar speaks of only one God.

---

32. Even when a sweeping claim seems to be contradicted within the same work -- such as in the <u>First Discourse</u>, where high praise for a certain few philosophers and scientists appears alongside a bitter, blanket denunciation of the arts and sciences -- that is not because Rousseau has overstated his case. Rather, the contradiction arises from the layered presence of separate arguments which, while obviously in some conflict with one another, nevertheless are internally consistent and ultimately reconcilable. (With regard to the example of the <u>First Discourse</u>, see Strauss, "On the Intention of Rousseau," and Masters, <u>The Political Philosophy of Rousseau</u>, pp. 205-13.) Though there is almost always more to Rousseau's philosophic claims than meets the eye, what does meet the eye is sincerely presented as truth; it may be taken at face value so long as one does not ignore what lies behind and beyond its face.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

is achieved in other places by presenting conscience as the "voice of nature."33) Conscience is more than reliable, it is "infallible." And it is infallible not just in conveying a set of rules, it is infallible as counselor and judge, telling us on a case by case basis how to apply the rules of good conduct. But the central claim of the passage and the one that is most relevant to the interpretation I am trying to advance is the ontological claim: Conscience and conscience alone elevates our "ignorant and limited" being to a level above that of the beasts. Freedom and perfectibility set human beings apart from the animals. (SD, 114-15) But it is conscience which makes of this separateness a true superiority. Conscience is itself sublime. And, being such, it is the sole source of whatever excellence we have. Which takes us at last to the heart of the matter.

In calling conscience the sole maker of "the excellence of my nature" (LM, 1111), Rousseau is making an extraordinary claim. He is crediting conscience not only with telling us what justice demands in this or that situation -- not an inconsiderable task in itself -- but also with being the source of, with making, everything else that is distinctive and excellent in human nature. If conscience is the sole source of human excellence, then it

33. See, for example, Emile IV:267 and 286-87 and the Fifth of the Lettres morales.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

must be ultimately responsible for every manifestation of this excellence. Rousseau's claim can be taken to mean no less. We must therefore attribute to conscience all of the capacities and inclinations that express or manifest this excellence. If friendship or romantic love or conjugal and parental love evince "the excellence of [our] nature" -- and clearly they do for Rousseau[34] -- then they owe their existence to conscience. If a fine aesthetic sensibility, one which finds joy in the truly beautiful, is a part of "the excellence of [human] nature" -- and, again, it certainly is for Rousseau[35] -- then it too owes its existence to conscience. If the disinterested love of truth is a mark of excellence -- and we are justified in concluding that Rousseau sees it as such, judging from the fact that he adduces his own love of truth in support of

---

34. That Rousseau deems these loving relations expressions of the excellence of human nature is manifestly clear from the celebratory treatment he gives them in Emile, in the Nouvelle Heloise and even -- and most tellingly -- in the Second Discourse, where familial love is said to inspire "the sweetest sentiments known to men."(146-47)

---

35. A fine aesthetic sensibility is to be found in both of Rousseau's exemplars of natural excellence, Emile and Jean-Jacques, and so may safely be said to be an expression of the excellence of human nature. Love of beauty is natural. Indeed, Joseph Cropsey interestingly suggests that for Rousseau it is beauty which gives value to love: "Love is the myth that opens the heart to the beautiful," and "Love is the illusion that will make [Emile] accessible to beauty." See "The Human Vision of Rousseau: Reflections on Emile," in Political Philosophy and the Issues of Politics (Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1977), pp. 328-29.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

his claim to personal excellence36 -- then it too would not exist but for conscience. Rousseau's estimation of modern humanity may be dim, but his assessment of human possibility is a veritable rainbow in its variety of excellences. One need only consider the multiplicity of fine qualities in Emile or even in the somewhat less consistent but more brilliant Jean-Jacques. Conscience alone is the source of our excellence, the source of our sublimity. It is the sun behind the rainbow.

How does conscience accomplish all this? Rousseau nowhere specifies the precise mechanism whereby conscience engineers or otherwise guides the development of these excellent qualities. Nor can we infer the details from his writings. Indeed, not even the inculcation of virtue or the love of virtue, the most obvious of conscience's developmental accomplishments, is fully explained. Rousseau eschews metapsychological speculation, just as, and probably for the same reasons that, he avoids metaphysical speculation.37 And yet this lacuna is perhaps less significant than it may seem, for Rousseau does provide quite a full account of the order and the general principles of wholesome moral development. And the remaining mystery, the mystery of how, specifically, conscience causes the development of higher sentiment -- the mystery of the mechanics of sublimation -- is no greater than or even very different from the mysteries

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

surrounding all manner of cognitive and physiological development. Of our various mental and physical capacities we still know -- science still knows -- at best only _that_, and _when_, and in a certain, limited sense, _how_, they develop. (The "how" of which we have some knowledge concerns only the genetic encoding and transmission of instructions, not the original writing of the instructions.) Of formal and final causes science, as such, knows nothing. It does not understand how it is that our various capacities are made to appear, how it is that the capacities to speak or to reason or to appreciate music or art -- or the capacities simply to walk or to run -- absent in the infant, later appear.[38] So it is not to be wondered at that Rousseau does not tell us with regard to

---

36. See almost any part of the _Dialogues_, a work of self-justification to which the claim of a disinterested love of truth is central. An example: "In all other books, I first recognized the passion that had dictated them and the personal goal the author had in mind. Only J[ean-]J[acques] seemed to seek the truth with rectitude and simplicity of heart."(I:53) Note, too, that Rousseau had chosen as his personal motto the words of Juvenal: "vitam impendere vero" ("to devote one's life to the truth").

---

37. Rousseau widely advertised his view that man's efforts at metaphysical speculation had so far proved useless and unreliable. See, for example, the Third of the _Lettres morales_. Also see Cranston, p. 289.

---

38. One sometimes concludes, incorrectly, that because science has come to understand the phenomenology of a certain thing's development it has grasped the original and/or final _causes_ of the development. It might be useful to note that the widespread dissemination of knowledge about human genetics and reproduction has taken little or no toll on the popular sense of the mystery and even the miracle of life -- perhaps it has even enhanced it.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

moral and sentimental development what science still cannot tell us with regard to cognitive and physiological development.

And in any event, to inquire after the mechanism whereby conscience accounts for human excellence, to ask how conscience does what it does, is to ask the wrong question of Rousseau. For conscience as such does not *do* anything. Conscience is not either a faculty or a part of the soul *per se*. It is not an actor. Rather, to use a category that Rousseau introduces in the *Second Discourse*, it is a *principle of soul*.

In the *Second Discourse* Rousseau seeks to explain with scientific economy the workings of the soul of man in the state of nature. He wishes to reduce the many disparate desires of natural man to the fewest possible motivational categories. He finds that a pair of categories will suffice: "I believe I perceive in [the soul] two principles anterior to reason, of which one interests us ardently in our well-being and our self-preservation, and the other inspires in us a natural repugnance to see any sensitive being perish or suffer."(95) Such are the two principles which suffice to explain the comparatively limited capacities of the original natural man. These two principles do not suffice to explain the vastly deeper and more complex soul of the civilized natural man, however. To explain Emile's soul Rousseau needs deeper and more

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

complex principles. In place of the savage's simple, unselfconscious self-love he needs a deeper and self-conscious self-love, one that comprehends sociable impulses and needs: he needs an admixture of enriched *amour de soi* and well-regulated *amour-propre*. And in place of the savage's unarticulated repugnance to see others suffer he needs a larger principle that includes that repugnance but goes well beyond it, a principle that can account for true moral and sentimental excellence: it is this principle that he calls conscience. Conscience, then, is to Emile and to Jean-Jacques what the repugnance to see his fellows suffer was to the savage. It is a principle of soul, a minimal scientific explanation of many psychic phenomena.39

There is a further similarity between the savage's and Emile's respective pairs of principles of soul. In each case the second principle ultimately proves to be an aspect or consequence of the first -- an aspect or consequence, that is, of benign self-love. In the final analysis it is his *amour de soi* that makes the savage feel repugnance at seeing others suffer and that makes him refrain from needlessly injuring others. And it is *amour de soi* that ultimately accounts for conscience, too. The following

---

39. For a useful discussion of the scientific sense of a "principle of soul" see Masters, *The Political Philosophy of Rousseau*, pp. 143-46. Masters, however, addresses only pity, the principle of soul so identified in the *Second Discourse*; he does not interpret conscience as a principle of soul.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

lines from the Lettre à Beaumont make this point quite clearly while also confirming, or at least suggesting, that conscience is indeed the successor to the savage's repugnance to see others suffer. And they also tell us with great succinctness just what is the content of this principle of soul called conscience.

> Self-love [l'amour de soi] is not a simple passion, but has two principles, namely, the intelligent being and the sensitive being, whose well-being is not the same. The appetite of the senses tends to that of the body and the love of order to that of the soul. This second love, when developed and made active, is called conscience; but conscience is only developed and only acts from enlightenment. It is only by acquiring enlightenment that man succeeds in knowing order; and it is only when he knows it that his conscience leads him to love it. The man who has made no comparisons and has seen no relationships has no conscience. In such a state as this a man only knows himself; he does not see his own well-being to be identified with or contrary to that of anyone else; he neither hates anything nor loves anything; but limited to no more than physical instinct, he is no one, he is animal. He is what I have demonstrated in my Discourse on Inequality. (OC IV:936; emphasis added)[40]

What is conscience? It is "the love of order . . . when developed and made active." "Love" in this instance clearly does not refer to a passion; rather, like the "love" of "love of self" it is something more basic than and prior to the passions. It is the source of passions and sentiments. It is a principle of soul.

Rousseau considers conscience to be an aspect of amour de soi because it tends to the well-being of a part, the

---

40. This translation was done by John Hope Mason and appears in The Indispensable Rousseau, ed. Mason (New York: Quartet Books, 1979), p. 233.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

highest part, of the self, namely the soul. Surely never has something designated as self-love been further removed from selfishness. Yet calling conscience an aspect of self-love is perfectly in keeping with Rousseau's understanding of amour de soi as something good.41 Amour de soi, we recall, is nothing other than the enjoyment (and the wish for the continuation) of existence as it is experienced through the vessel of the self.42 The deeper and more developed the self, the closer amour de soi comes to approximating a love of nature or a love of existence itself. What does it mean to say that the self becomes deeper and more developed? In Chapter One we encountered part of the answer: we learned that it is possible for one to experience much of nature or much of existence as part of one's self; that is, we encountered the notion that one's felt identity can be vastly expanded -- as, for example, Jean-Jacques' is in the Fifth of his Reveries. We now meet with another part of the answer. A large part of the deepening and development of the self consists in the development of conscience. As "love of order," conscience is also love of nature or love of existence as such. For the order that is referred to, the object of the love that

---

41. Rousseau consistently maintains not only that amour de soi is good but also that it is the source of goodness toward others: "Love of men derived from love of self [amour de soi] is the principle of human justice." (Emile IV:235n.)

---

42. See Chapter One, pages 43-47, above.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

is conscience, is the harmony of the cosmos, the harmony that Rousseau discerns in every part and aspect of existence save those that have been fouled by the hand of man. The savage, lacking an activated conscience, enjoyed existence only insofar as his brute senses permitted. Emile or Jean-Jacques, by contrast, enjoy existence more fully because, with activated consciences, they are able to enjoy, they are able to love, what reason reveals to them of nature's essential quality, its wondrous order.

To be sure Rousseau at times seems to refer to conscience as something more limited than a principle of soul. Indeed, in _most_ cases he uses the word in a narrower, more conventional sense, in which "conscience" signifies a faculty, an intra-psychic actor, a doer of deeds. We have already seen several examples of such usage in the quotations from _Emile_ and the _Lettres morales_ that appeared earlier in this chapter. In those instances Rousseau used the word "conscience" to denote an inner moral sense, a presence that speaks to us and rewards and punishes us. But when he uses the word in that narrower, more conventional sense he is in fact speaking of a particular expression or effect of conscience-as-principle-of-soul. His primary definition of conscience is the broader one: Conscience-as-principle-of-soul supercedes conscience-as-psychic-actor (or conscience-as-moral-faculty) because it subsumes it. It could only be

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

conscience in its broader sense that Rousseau has in mind when he credits it as the maker of all human excellence, for the moral faculty as such cannot possibly be supposed to have informed the development of every higher sentiment.

As a principle of soul, conscience has multiple manifestations and so admits of several somewhat different but ultimately consistent characterizations. Thus we find Rousseau describing it variously as an "inner feeling"(Dialogues III:242), as the voice of nature(Emile IV:286), as the "inner voice which judges me"(LM, 1104), and as an "innate principle of justice and moral virtue anterior to all national prejudices and to all the maxims of education."(LM, 1108; also see Emile IV:289) None of these descriptions is at all inconsistent with the notion of conscience as a principle of soul whose primary content is a love of order. Perhaps the most illuminating of Rousseau's descriptions, though, is one he places in the mouth of the Savoyard Vicar. Conscience "is to the soul what instinct is to the body."(Emile IV:286)43 What is useful about this particular formulation, even more than its underscoring that conscience is an aspect of self-love, is that it helps make clear just what it means to say that conscience is a principle of soul. Rousseau compares conscience not to the many instincts of the body but,

---

43. The Vicar also refers to conscience as "the voice of the soul"(IV286), and in the Lettres morales, as we have seen, Rousseau calls it "divine instinct."(1111)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

rather, to "instinct" in the singular. Spoken thusly, "instinct" refers to the general principle that underlies the body's many particular instincts; it refers to the generality behind the particulars. Likening conscience to the body's instinct therefore achieves a comparable effect: it captures the defining characteristic of conscience as a principle of soul, namely, that it is unitary but manifold in its effects, that it is a general principle (a love of order) which manifests itself in multifarious ways.

Rousseau never calls conscience a principle of soul. In fact he does not bother to reduce Emile's soul to any set of principles. His method in Emile is far more in the nature of constructing than of deconstructing, of elaborating rather than boiling down to basic principles. It is only in the Second Discourse, whose method is far more conventionally scientific, that he concerns himself with identifying principles of soul. Nevertheless I have argued that we should consider conscience a principle of soul. I would maintain that, if Rousseau had used the Second Discourse's scientific methodology on Emile, he would have identified the love of order, i.e., conscience, as a principle of the civilized natural man's soul. (I would also maintain that, had he used this method in his autobiographical works, he would have identified the love of order as a basic principle of his own soul.) And I would maintain that, while it may have suited Rousseau not

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

to bother identifying principles of soul in Emile, our understanding of that work and of his thinking about nature generally would be enhanced by our identifying these principles ourselves.

Why insist on conscience's being a principle of soul? Three reasons. First, the love of order is found at the bottom of nearly all of Emile's characteristics, including all of his moral, aesthetic and spiritual excellences. This we have already seen. Second, the love of order connects these excellences with one another. In discovering the manifold effects of conscience, we perceive that goodness and virtue and good taste and love of beauty and appreciation of the harmony of nature and the cosmos are all manifestations of the same principle. Conscience, in other words, explains a lot. It proves to be the common source of Emile's most outstanding characteristics and so affords us some insight into the meaning of nature. And, third, the effects of conscience cannot be attributed to any other single cause -- which is to say that conscience is not reducible to any more basic phenomenon.

To be sure, conscience depends upon a variety of faculties in order to have its effects. At a minimum it depends on the ability to perceive the relations between things, and in many of its manifestations it depends specifically on the ability to identify with others people. Without that ability there can be no true pity nor any of

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

the social virtues -- generosity, clemency, benevolence, etc. -- that Rousseau sees as deriving from pity.(<u>SD</u>, 131-31) But none of the faculties on which conscience depends can in itself, or even in combination with others, account for the manifold effects of conscience. The ability to identify with others, for example, is only a capacity. It cannot explain why one should <u>want</u> to identify with others. And it certainly cannot explain any of the aesthetic and spiritual, as opposed to the narrowly moral, effects of conscience. Simply put, there can be no full understanding of Emile's or Jean-Jacques' soul without respecting the decisive role of the irreducible love of order. Everything natural is orderly, or harmonious. Every natural man, whether savage, civilized or "post-civilized" (as we might call Jean-Jacques), partakes of this order: every natural man enjoys psychic order and is harmoniously disposed toward the world around him. Emile and Jean-Jacques, however, not only <u>are</u> orderly, they <u>love</u> order as well, and they are altogether shaped by this love.

Its breadth and generality as a principle of soul make conscience something larger than a moral sense. In its primary sense conscience is a <u>source</u> of the moral sense, and a source of other sensibilities as well, including aesthetic and what one might call philosophic and scientific sensibilities. And yet it is not for nothing

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

that Rousseau chooses the morally freighted "conscience" as the name for this newly discovered, apparently supramoral principle of soul. For while conscience is indeed something prior to the moral sense, it is nevertheless an essentially moral thing after all. The love of order is itself a moral principle. Indeed, the love of order constitues the innermost meaning of goodness, virtue and justice: to be good is to have maintained natural psychic unity and balance, which is to say, natural order; to be virtuous is to have aligned one's will with the general will, which is to say, with the order dictated by reason; and justice might well be defined as living in a way that is consistent with either natural or rational (i.e., civil) order, depending on whether one is a man or a citizen. Consequently, every true expression of this love of order -- every effect of conscience, even those which have to do with taste or aesthetic sensibility or devotion to truth -- is at root a moral phenomenon. Let us examine in a little more detail some of the many ways in which this love of order manifests itself in Emile.

The first product of conscience is pity. Like "conscience" itself, "pity" is a word with dual usage in Rousseau's corpus. Ordinarily it denotes the sentiment of commiseration: one shares another's suffering and, now suffering oneself, wishes for the other's suffering to end. This sentiment, being a product or manifestation of

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

conscience, appears only after one has acquired some degree of self-consciousness, some awareness of one's relations to others. Emile learns to feel pity only when his nascent and as yet unconscious sexual passion leads him to appreciate his connectedness to others of his kind. (IV:220-27) Prior to that point he is simply incapable of pity. He is surely good and even admirable: As he comes to his fifteenth year, "Emile is laborious, temperate, patient, firm, and full of courage."(III:208) He has good judgment which is untouched by prejudice or concern for the opinion of others. He has learned how to die -- or rather has never forgotten. "In a word, of virtue Emile has all that relates to himself." But until he gains knowledge of his relations with others, he has no capacity for pity and therefore none of the social virtues. It takes knowledge of one's social relations, which itself presupposes an ability to imagine or feel oneself in the plight of suffering others, to awaken the natural capacity for pity.

> Social attachments develop in us only with our knowledge. Pity, although natural to man's heart, would remain forever inactive without imagination to set it in motion. How do we let ourselves be moved to pity? By transporting ourselves outside ourselves; by identifying with the suffering being. We suffer only to the extent that we judge him to suffer; it is not in ourselves but in him that we suffer. Think how much acquired knowledge this transport presupposes! How could I imagine evils of which I have no idea? How could I suffer when I see another suffer, if I do not even know that he suffers, if I do not know what he and I have in common? Someone who has never reflected cannot be clement, or just, or pitying; any more than he can be wicked or vindictive. He who imagines nothing feels only himself; in the midst of

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

mankind he is alone. (Languages IX:261)44

"Pity" in this passage refers to the sentiment of commiseration. Yet "pity" is used by Rousseau in another sense as well. Exactly as he does with "conscience," Rousseau employs a word which ordinarily denotes a specific psychic phenomenon -- and which he himself frequently employs in just such a way -- to represent a principle of soul. As we observe from the passage quoted above (and from numerous other passages45), pity is not active in very primitive psychic constitutions. It lies dormant in the young child just as it lay dormant in the young childhood of the race. That is, pity as a full-blown sentiment is absent from the young child and was absent from man in the pure state of nature. At most, man in the pure state of nature seems to have felt a kind of instinctive repugnance at seeing the suffering of his fellow sensitive beings, a repugnance which, unlike full-blown pity, did not require imagination or reflection. In this he was like other animals, such as the horse which takes care not to trample a living body. In those cases where Rousseau seems to indicate that pity was in fact present in the original natural man, he is speaking of pity not as a full-blown

---

44. See Emile IV:221-27 for elaboration on this point.

45. The sentiment of pity is conspicuously absent from Rousseau's summary portraits of primitive naturalness: it is absent from man in the pure state of nature (SD, 137) and from the pre-adolescent Emile (III:208).

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

sentiment but rather as an instinctual repugnance or else a principle of soul -- exactly as he says he is. (SD, 95, 130)46

Rousseau's dual usage of "pity" seems to have ended between the publication of the Second Discourse and the writing of Emile. In the Discourse "pity" is alternately a principle of soul and the sentiment of commiseration. In Emile it is no longer a principle of soul; it is only a sentiment. What seems to have occurred is less a change in Rousseau's thought or methodology than a change in the philosophic demands he faced. In the Discourse he needed to explain the goodness of a being who felt no love or sympathy for anyone else. For that, it was enough to posit a principle of soul which manifested itself in a combination of indifference to others and instinctual repugnance at seeing them suffer, a combination which was as benevolent in its effect as the full-blown sentiment of pity would have been. Hence the choice of "pity" to represent that principle of soul. ("Conscience" appears but once in the Discourse, in the dedicatory epistle to the Republic of Geneva, where it clearly denotes the faculty of moral judgment, not a principle of soul. (85)) In Emile, by contrast, the very same modern-scientific approach, the

---

46. For his recognition and elucidation of the distinction between pity as a sentiment and pity as a principle of soul I am indebted to Roger Masters; see note 39 above.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

very same kind of attempt to reduce the workings of the soul to as few basic principles as possible, requires the positing of a larger principle of soul. The highly complicated soul of the civilized natural man cannot be explained by the same principle used to explain the relatively simple soul of the savage. To explain the soul of Emile requires that we posit a principle of soul which manifests itself in phenomena whose effects go far beyond those of pity; he needed to posit a principle of soul whose effects are multifarious and multidimensional, and yet which are related in virtue of their expressing a love of order. Hence the choice of "conscience" rather than the continued use of "pity." In _Emile_ and with regard to civilized men generally, "pity" stands for only one thing, the sentiment of commiseration. As such it is a manifestation of the principle of soul called conscience.

And yet, even when it is conceived as this one thing, as a sentiment, pity turns out to be the stuff of several things: it is a sentiment which takes multiple shapes and forms. In a passage in which he speaks of pity as a sentiment, Rousseau contends that "from this quality alone flow [many] social virtues." "In fact," he asks,

> what are generosity, clemency, humanity, if not pity applied to the weak, to the guilty, or to the human species in general? Benevolence and even friendship are, rightly understood, the products of a constant pity fixed on a particular object: for is desiring that someone not suffer anything but desiring that he be happy? Even should it be true that commiseration is only a sentiment that puts us in the position of

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

> him who suffers -- a sentiment that is obscure and strong in savage man, developed but weak in civilized man -- what would this idea matter to the truth of what I say, except to give it more force? (*SD*, 131-32)

Excepting only romantic passion, pity would seem to be the direct source of all nonexploitative social feelings.

If the "social virtues" flow directly from pity, many other good things flow from it indirectly. This we may conclude from the case of Emile, whose elaborate education in pity, a wide-ranging enterprise replete with field research as well as much study of history and fables, culminates in a state that falls little short of moral perfection.47 Upon completing his description of Emile's education in pity, Rousseau catalogs some of its far-reaching effects.

> I have first given the means, and now I show the effect. What *great views* I see settling little by little in his head! What *sublime sentiments* stifle the germ of the petty passions in his heart! What *judicial clarity*, what *accuracy of reason* I see forming in him, as a result of the cultivation of his inclinations, of the experience which concentrates the wishes of *a great soul* within the narrow limit of the possible and makes a man who is superior to others and, unable to raise them to his level, is capable of lowering himself to theirs! The true principles of the just, the true models of the beautiful, all the moral relations of beings, all the ideas of order are imprinted on his understanding. He sees the place of each thing and the cause which removes it from its place; he sees what can do good and what stands in its way. Without having experienced the human passions, he knows their illusions and their effects. (IV:253; emphasis added)

As pity is the sentimental source of nearly all social

47. This moral/sentimental education is recounted in detail in Book IV, pp. 221-49.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

virtue and fellow feeling, a proper education in pity amounts to a wide-ranging social education. And a successful education in pity yields all the excellences -- moral, intellectual and aesthetic -- that Rousseau cites in this interior portrait of the maturing Emile. To be sure, neither pity nor even conscience deserves full credit for Emile's sound judgment, for his "judicial clarity" and "accuracy of reason." The intellectual virtues -- and indeed, for that matter, the social virtues as well -- require reason as well as conscience in order to develop. But neither could Emile have developed so well as thinker and judge without conscience's help, for it is conscience which inspires him with wholesome motives and which thereby virtually innoculates him against the passions that distort most men's judgment. Without "sublime sentiments" and "great views," which are incontestable manifestations of conscience and which appear only as a result of his education in pity, Emile would have been less sound of mind, not to mention less sound of spirit. The "love of order . . . when developed and made active" comes to nothing less than intellectual, moral and aesthetic superiority.

Emile's education in pity does not come close to completing his comprehensive natural education. He still needs to learn of God, Woman and politics; he still needs

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

to acquire refined taste and incorruptible virtue. (These are things which can be well learned only with the motive power of romantic love.) His incipient sexual passion still needs to be sublimated, first into longing and then into sustainable love. But his education in pity has successfully prepared him for all of this: conscience has fitted him, as it were, with a template. Or, rather, conscience is itself a template, so shaping the further development of his soul as to ensure that newly emerging inclinations will not contradict the principle of harmony that lies at the heart of all naturalness. That is to say, conscience, the active love of order, will keep Emile's sexual and social passions from becoming vessels of disorderly _amour-propre_. It is in this -- in the fact that conscience plays the decisive role, and, even more, in the _way_ that it plays this role -- that Rousseau's understanding of sublimation differs most clearly from other understandings.

In the cases of Plato and Freud sublimation is conceived in terms of a particular psychic actor (reason and the ego, respectively) acting upon -- that is, elevating -- desire. The elevation of desire is explained, even if only metaphorically, as the consequence of a positive act: For Plato, reason apprehends the superiority of higher objects of desire and so lures desire upward; for Freud, the ego determines what might serve as the best

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

available substitute object and redirects instinctual energy accordingly. In Rousseau's case, by contrast, there is no comparable positive act. One cannot say, even metaphorically, that conscience does any positive work, that it actively elevates desire. Rather, the process of Rousseauan sublimation is best explained in negative terms. The job of conscience is not to scout the terrain and discover better objects but rather to keep psychic energy from overflowing its natural channels, which is essentially negative work. As a principle of soul, conscience is less an intrapsychic actor than a developmental template whose task is to keep psychic energy from dissipating, thereby leaving it no choice but to rise as the higher mental faculties develop. In the passage quoted above Rousseau supplies, almost in passing, a concise summary of his conception of sublimation. He speaks of "the experience which _concentrates the wishes of a great soul within the narrow limit of the possible_ and [so] makes a man who is superior to others." The "experience" to which he refers is "the cultivation of [Emile's] inclinations," by which he means Emile's preadolescent education. But if education is the proximate cause of this elevation to superiority, conscience is the immediate as well as the formal cause. Conscience, then, is what concentrates the wishes of this great soul; conscience is the true sublimator.

To switch from the engineering metaphor (conscience as

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

developmental template) to a horticultural one, one might liken the basic principle of Rousseauan sublimation to pruning a tree. Pruning is a negative task, but one which encourages a positive phenomenon, that is, vertical growth. A comparable process takes place in Emile's soul. By activating and nourishing his conscience, Emile's education snips and otherwise discourages lower growth, thereby ensuring that all growth will take place in the higher regions. The whole thrust of the "negative education" of his youth is to prevent the premature (and hence distorting) development of such faculties as imagination and foresight, or, in the rare event that a characteristic does develop too early, to squelch it. To those who might object to this comparison on the grounds that pruning interferes with nature while Emile's education is supposed to cultivate it, we need only respond that naturalness in civilization is such a difficult attainment that it requires at least as much artifice as is involved in pruning. An education in civilized naturalness requires strict and constant, even if hidden, governance: "Instinct is good as long as it acts by itself; it is suspect from the moment it operates within man-made institutions. It must not be destroyed, but it must be regulated."(Emile IV:333-34) "One must use a great deal of art to prevent social man from being totally artificial."(Emile IV:317)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Emile's education in pity, then, yields an impressive array of excellences, and much that it does not yield directly, it at least makes possible by activating and cultivating conscience in the broadest sense of that word (which, as we have seen, is very broad indeed). This ostensible education in pity is in truth much more than an education in pity. It is an activation and cultivation of the love of order at all levels. And along with this love, it equips Emile with knowledge to match. As Rousseau states in the passage quoted above, "The true principles of the just, the true models of the beautiful, all the moral relations of beings, all the ideas of order are imprinted on his understanding."(IV:253)

The latter is a most extraordinary and revealing statement in several respects. In the first place, it is an enormous claim of success: Rousseau points to knowledge that any philosopher would be pleased to have and proclaims that such is the yield of the education in pity that he has given to an ordinary fifteen-year-old boy.48
Secondly, and by necessity, it is a claim in behalf of conscience: whatever belongs to pity belongs to conscience, of which pity, as we have seen, is but the first expression. Thirdly, it effectively conveys conscience's role as developmental template: Emile still has much to

---

48. Emile's ordinariness lies in his native endowments, not in the person he becomes -- which, of course, is precisely Rousseau's point.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

learn, but the principles which will guide his future learning have now been "imprinted" on his mind; they will govern the ways in which he assimilates future experiences both of the world and of his own fast-maturing soul. And finally, at the risk of reading too much into Rousseau's formulation, we seem to find in it an indication of his metaphysics -- or, if that is not the right term (and, judging from his professed disdain for metaphysics,[49] we might fairly guess that he would say that it is not), we seem to find in it an indication of his understanding of life's moral order. We seem to find an implied statement about the relationship between the just, the beautiful, the moral and the very idea of order itself.

Let us take note of the sequence in which Rousseau lists the results of Emile's education in pity. Listed first are "the true principles of the just." That principles of justice should be mentioned first seems natural enough, given the close and obvious relation between conscience and justice (Rousseau at times defines conscience as "an innate principle of justice."[50]) But the reasoning behind the remainder of the sequence may not be so obvious. Indeed, that the remaining acquisitions should appear in _any_ sequence is remarkable: that conscience, through an education in pity, should account for knowledge

---

49. See note 37 above.

50. See, for example, _Emile_ IV:289 and _LM_, 1108.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

of beauty and the rest is an extraordinary notion unique to Rousseau. But what of the sequence? What significance if any can we find in the list that proceeds from "the true principles of the just" to "the true models of the beautiful" to "all the moral relations of beings" to, finally, "all the ideas of order"? One plausible answer is that the list proceeds from that which is an expression to that which is the source, from that which is subsumed to that which subsumes, and from the more narrowly specific to the more general. Or, to use Platonic language, it may be that in Rousseau's understanding the just participates in the beautiful, which in turn participates in the moral relations of beings, which themselves participate in the idea(s) of order. This interpretation becomes all the more plausible as we notice the absence of a conjunction in the sentence. The sequence proceeds not in the manner of "first, second, third and fourth," but, rather, "first, second, third, fourth." The absence of a conjunction seems to imply that with each successive reformulation Rousseau means to correct himself by expanding his object, that each successive element is presented as being larger than and subsuming its predecessor.51 This much, at any rate, is incontrovertible: One who has grasped "all the ideas of order," the final element of the list, will necessarily have grasped all of the preceding elements, since those other elements are but specific cases (social, aesthetic,

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

etc.) of order. Moral relations, beauty and justice are respectively defined as one or another expression of order, and so we are entitled to say that conscience, which is itself defined as the love of order, is the source of Emile's (or anyone's) recognition of and attachment to the just and the beautiful.

And so we now have a second reason to attribute the higher human capacities, and not just the obviously moral ones, to conscience. (The first reason, which we have already discussed, was Rousseau's explicit attribution of "all the excellence of [human] nature" to conscience.) And there are even more reasons still -- beginning with the simple fact that these capacities develop in Emile. Emile is presented to us as (civilized) naturalness incarnate. It does not seem unreasonable, therefore, to infer that his every trait is natural (in the civil sense). If Emile acquires good taste and a love of beauty, then that is significant reason to consider good taste and a love of beauty natural. And if we are prepared to consider these traits natural, it is but a small and perfectly logical step to attribute them to conscience, since conscience is

---

51. Omitting a conjunction for the purpose of suggesting a more expansive reformulation is not unknown in world literature. Consider, for example, the conjunctionless sequence in Prospero's famous speech in The Tempest:

> And, like the baseless fabric of this vision,
> The cloud-capp'd towers, the gorgeous palaces,
> The solemn temples, the great globe itself,
> Yea, all which it inherit, shall dissolve . . .(IV, 1)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

that part of nature (it is the only part of nature) which embraces spiritual phenomena, which these traits certainly are.

But we need not rely only on such inferential reasoning to establish the naturalness of the higher capacities. For we have Rousseau's explicit declaration, first, that good taste has a basis in nature and, second, that there is a causal, sequential relationship between taste, ideas of beauty and, finally, moral notions. We have from him a series of unambiguous statements which establish the naturalness of qualities which one has traditionally regarded as the distinguishing marks of high civilization.

Emile journeys to Paris for an extensive education in taste. In the course of this education, he learns a truth with which few Parisians, despite their refinement -- or, rather, because of it -- are acquainted: "All the true models of taste are in nature." (IV:341) Armed with that understanding, Emile is able to acquire the Parisians' delicacy without the grotesquerie and spiritual distortion that all too regularly accompany it. He is able to learn a mode of expression worthy of the love he has, or will have, to express. Good taste has a basis in nature; it is natural. And as it is, as well, a distinctively human attainment, a spiritual attainment; and as it inclines toward either nature-based or nature-mimetic harmony; we

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

may surely say that it is a manifestation of conscience. A good aesthetic sensibility, of which good taste is the first sign, is as much a product of conscience as is a strong and just moral sense. Indeed, these two products are directly related: "By means of taste the mind is imperceptibly opened to ideas of the beautiful of every sort and, finally, to the moral relations related to them."(Emile V:375) What is the connection? The answer, it would seem, is that appreciating (the beauty of) order in one context awakens the mind to appreciate it in others. "The love of the beautiful," Rousseau writes, "is a sentiment as natural to the human heart as the love of self. . . . Whatever the philosophers may say of it, this love is innate to man and serves as principle to his conscience."(d'Alembert, 23)

The moral and aesthetic sensibilities, if wholesomely developed, are intimately related. They are different expressions of the same basic principle, the love of order. They are different expressions, that is, of conscience. And they are not even so very different at that. For the respective peaks of morality and beauty are in fact one and the same thing. The "supreme beauty," says the Rousseau of the Dialogues, is none other than virtue.(II:127) It is as "an idolater of the beautiful in all its genres" that Jean-Jaques cherishes virtue. "Order, harmony, beauty, perfection are the objects of his sweetest meditations,"

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

and it is precisely because virtue so perfectly embodies these qualities that he considers it the preeminent good among human things. Emile, too, learns to prize virtue for its beauty. On the one occasion on which he is asked to resist inclination so that he might develop virtue, the case for virtue is made at least in part on aesthetic grounds. "Do you want, then, to live happily and wisely?" asks his tutor. "Attach your heart only to imperishable <u>beauty</u>" -- that is, to virtue. (V:446; emphasis added)

Thus may a man reared in civilization achieve the inner state that will enable him to remain natural. His social and sexual passions are sublimated by an education which funnels them through the developmental template of conscience. This education, Emile's education, is full of artifice. It entails much manipulation -- not of his will, to be sure, but of the surrounding environment, which perhaps amounts to an even greater intrusion upon his freedom, in that it guides his will without his knowing it. But this education, for all its calculated manipulation, is nevertheless a natural education, for it ensures that all his higher capacities will accord with the lower ones; it ensures that Emile's soul will be as internally harmonious as that of the savage in the state of nature, or at least very nearly so. Sublimation is natural: it produces sentiments and inclinations that constitute a deepened and

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

extended amour de soi, and it thereby ensures that the amour-propre that is unavoidable even in Emile will be limited in extent and benign in character. Sublimation thus meets the criteria for naturalness that were enunciated at the start of this chapter. Or, to apply a different test, one which we encountered in the previous chapter, sublimation succeeds in making a life which "consists in the closest possible approximation to the state of nature which is possible on the level of humanity."[52] And it does so, moreover, while at the same time elevating the soul to a level at which it partakes of the sublime: the "level of humanity" is a potentially very high level.[53]

There can be no natural life in civilization without sublimation. The point is not so much that sublimity is a necessary aspect of naturalness as that only sublimation, only the upward channeling of psychic energy and especially sexual passion, can keep desire from roaming in immiserating (because unfulfillable) directions. Only true beauty can continuously command the gaze of desire and so keep it from straying to more easily available but

---

52. The test is drawn from Strauss, Natural Right and History, p. 282.

53. As we noted toward the end of Chapter One, elevation is actually required if psychic balance and order are to be maintained -- that is, if amour de soi is to survive the threat of a rampaging amour-propre.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

corrupting objects; only true love can prevent debauchery. There is no middle course. And so while sublimity is not a necessary aspect of naturalness, it is necessary to naturalness after all -- if not as a constitutive element then as a means to it.

But not everything about the civilized natural man is sublime. That is to say, sublimation, though necessary for reconciling civilization and naturalness, is not by itself sufficient to the task. In the intrapsychic drama which culminates in the development of the civilized natural man, sublimation is indeed the star, but not even the most virtuosic star could make a success of so complex a production as this without assistance from a worthy supporting cast. Our elaboration of the meaning of naturalness amid civilization would not be complete, even in outline, without our considering those aspects of naturalness which arise in some way other than through sublimation.

WHAT ELSE IS NATURAL, AND WHY

As we have seen, the naturalness of sublimation is indicated in several ways. It is suggested by sublimation's being the work of conscience, which Rousseau explicitly labels natural. It is betokened by Rousseau's many pronouncements that this or that consequence of

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

sublimation -- be it romantic love, the love of beauty, even the love of virtue -- is natural in the civil state.54 But all this evidence really just confirms a judgment whose primary basis lies elsewhere. The primary and sufficient reason for considering sublimation natural is that it deepens and extends amour de soi. Indeed, that it promotes or preserves amour de soi is the primary and sufficient reason (and a necessary condition) for considering any human attribute natural, whether it arises from sublimation or not.

Included among those natural characteristics that arise through some other process than sublimation are many which not only diverge from but actually contradict the characteristics of the savage. (Characteristics that do arise through sublimation tend to be more highly evolved than but still continuous with savage characteristics, as, for example, romantic love is more highly evolved than but continuous with savage sexuality.) Emile's naturalness consists at least in part in traits which for the savage would have been unnatural. Whereas the savage, for example, was indolent, Emile is highly active throughout

54. Note that it is not virtue but rather the love of virtue to which Rousseau accords natural status. Jean-Jacques, a purer example of naturalness than Emile (because he, unlike the latter, lives on the margins of society), lacks virtue, but he does love it. (See Dialogues II:126-27.) As for virtue itself, Rousseau does not pronounce it natural. Nevertheless one could make the case (as I attempt to do below) that even virtue can be natural, albeit only in the civil state.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

his life, enjoying and profiting from manual labor.(I:56, III:195-203) In fact, Rousseau comments on the unhealthfulness of laziness in civilized man.(_Corsica_, 323) And whereas the savage is unreflective, spending most of his free time asleep(_SD_, 112), Emile is relective, even meditative. "He must work like a peasant and think like a philosopher so as not to be as lazy as a savage."(III:202) Emile even develops honor, which, being a manifestation of _amour-propre_, was unknown to the savage but is nevertheless said to have a natural basis.(IV:417) And he develops virtue, perhaps the characteristic of this natural man which is most alien to the savage.

Obviously virtue is unnatural in the strict sense. It represents the subordination of inclination to duty (_Reveries_ VI:96), and if it is too much to say that virtue exists for the purpose of suppressing nature, it surely is not too much to say that it becomes necessary precisely where nature, in the form of goodness, proves inadequate as behavioral guide. "I have made you good rather than virtuous," says Jean-Jacques to the newly and passionately social Emile. "But he who is only good remains so only as long as he takes pleasure in being so. Goodness is broken and perishes under the impact of the human passions. The man who is only good is good only for himself."(V:444) To be good for others -- to be a natural man in the civil state -- he needs virtue. Nevertheless virtue is clearly

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

less natural than goodness. Is it natural at all?

The logic of the present interpretation would answer in the affirmative. Emile requires virtue precisely in order to maintain the psychic balance and harmony that constitute the heart of his naturalness. Without virtue, without this peculiar acquisition which seems so alien to everything else that is natural, the balance between desires and faculties will be destroyed.

> "How pitiable you are going to be, thus subjected to your unruly passions! There will always be privations, losses, and alarms. You will not even enjoy what is left to you. The fear of losing everything will prevent you from possessing anything. As a result of having wanted to follow only your passions, _you will never be able to satisfy them_. You will always seek repose, but it will always flee before you. You will be miserable, and you will become wicked. How could you not be, since you have only your unbridled desires as a law?"(V:444; emphasis added)

There is nothing natural about virtue -- except that it serves nature. Which makes it natural after all, so long as it remains essentially personal rather than civic in its purpose and orientation.55

With the case of virtue we have encountered a very important feature of Rousseau's understanding of nature. In the previous chapter we observed that there are different versions of natural men corresponding to different levels of naturalness. There is that which is

---

55. _Civic_ virtue is not natural. It serves the purpose of _de_naturalization in that it expresses and supports patriotism, which is a species of _amour-propre_ rather than _amour de soi_.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

natural in the savage state and that which is natural in the civil state; and though the two have significant elements in common, they are distinct categories. Now, in our elaboration of the second of these categories, we observe that there are degrees of naturalness _within_ that category. All that is natural in the civil state is not _equally_ natural in the civil state. Romantic love, for example, though not natural in the strict sense -- Rousseau claims to have shown in the _Second Discourse_ that love "is not as natural as is thought"(_Emile_ V:430) -- nevertheless is a matter of involuntary attraction and inclination and so seems believably natural in our everyday sense of things. Virtue, on the other hand, entails the overcoming of inclination by will, and so strikes us, by any commonsense standard, as much less natural. Indeed, in a certain sense, it entails the _overcoming_ of nature. But because it helps to maintain psychic order and balance and thereby protects _amour de soi_ -- because it serves nature's purpose -- it merits inclusion among those things which are natural in the civil state. In the acquisition of virtue, nature is no guide: "It abandons us to ourselves." (_Emile_ V:445) Nevertheless nature requires that virtue be acquired. Nature calls for and, in the case of Emile, receives virtue's service. And that, even if only in a technical sense, makes virtue natural, just as enlistment makes soldiers out of even the most improbable civilians:

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

it is purpose which determines identity.[56]

To whatever degree, in the end there is only one criterion for determining whether a characteristic or activity is natural in the civil state: Does it promote or protect *amour de soi*? If it does, it is natural; if it does not, it is not. How, though, shall we know? It is not an easy thing to recognize just what does and what does not serve *amour de soi*. Indeed, given the futile records of even the most renowned philosophers (according to Rousseau's assessment, at least[57]), one might justifiably

---

56. That there are degrees of naturalness applies not only to attributes but also to needs. See *Fragments*, 529-30. Also see Schwartz, pp. 14-15.

---

57. Rousseau's contempt for the achievements of philosophy is perhaps expressed most vividly in the *First Discourse*: "What do the writings of the best known philosophers contain? What are the teachings of these lovers of wisdom? To listen to them, would one not take them for a troop of charlatans, each crying from his own spot on a public square: Come to me, I alone do not deceive. One holds that there are no bodies and that everything is appearance. Another that there is no substance other than matter, nor any God but the world. This one suggests that there are neither virtues nor vices and that moral good and evil are chimeras. That one that men are wolves and can devour one another with clear conscience. O great philosophers, why don't you save these profitable lessons for your friends and children; you would soon reap the reward, and we would have no fear of finding among ourselves any of your followers."(60-61)

Moreover, philosophers are particularly to be distrusted when they purport to identify what belongs to nature: "Our philosophers never fail to display the word *nature* pompously at the beginning of all their writings. But open the book and you will see the metaphysical jargon they have decorated with this fine name."(*Dialogues* III:239n.)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

despair of ever discerning which of our myriad impulses and activities are natural. One might despair, that is, if one were left to one's own abstract reasoning -- which, fortunately, one is not.

Nature is beneficent and provides much guidance to those who have not lost the ability to sense its promptings. Most of that which is natural, even that which is natural only in the civil state and to the barest degree, has a way of making itself known. Or, rather, it has a way of making itself felt. Rousseau is in earnest when he exclaims in the concluding paragraph of the _First Discourse_:

> O virtue! sublime science of simple souls, are so many difficulties and preparations needed to know you? Are not your principles engraved in all hearts, and is it not enough in order to learn your laws to commune with oneself and listen to the voice of one's conscience in the silence of the passions? That is true philosophy . . .(64)58

Those people and those societies that live in closer proximity to nature (we are referring here largely to savage and peasant societies) do not do so as a result of superior reasoning. If anything, they benefit from _not_ being sophisticated thinkers. They remain close to nature

---

58. (a) I take Rousseau's reference to virtue to include goodness. See note 29 above.

(b) The same sentiment is expressed in the Fifth of the _Lettres morales_ and by the Vicar at _Emile_ IV:286: "I do not draw these rules [of conduct] from the principles of a high philosophy, but find them written by nature with ineffaceable characters in the depth of my heart. I have only to consult myself about what I want to do."

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

because they have not allowed anything to obscure the principles that nature has engraved in all human hearts. Neither interest nor passion, nor the obfuscatory power of a sophisticated but amoral reason, has been permitted to smother or drown out the voice of nature. And this is good news for us as well, who _have_ allowed interest and passion (with the assistance of their handmaiden, reason) to remove us from nature. It is good for us because we can find in the examples of these more natural people much guidance as to the substance, the concrete actualities, of civilized naturalness. In our quest for knowledge of what would constitute a natural life in civilization we need not begin our search from scratch; we need not search at random for the traits and ways of life that would bring us closer to nature. Instead, we can learn something of what is natural by observing those who have remained close to nature. We can grant to their particular characteristics and activities the tentative presumption of naturalness and then test the merit of that presumption with our reason. (We do need reason, we reflective beings who would know what is natural.) In this way one can employ reason in the service of nature, which is where it belongs but where it has all too seldom been. One can take one's philosophic bearings from nature. Which is exactly what Rousseau claims to have done.

The strongest signal -- one might even call it

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

presumptive evidence -- that a given characteristic is natural and worth (re)attaining is that it is universally present among primitive peoples but is not so common among modern ones.[59] There are many such characteristics, mostly negative ones, though there are critically important positive ones as well.[60] The negative characteristics are of the sort that one typically associates, in our everyday discourse, with the phrase "getting back to nature." In fact, though he does not use exactly that term, Rousseau provides in the Sixth of the *Lettres morales* a handbook for just that purpose. (He is surely the spiritual father of the modern version of this idea, though, to be sure, children have a way of creatively reinterpreting their parents' intentions.) In the *Lettres* Rousseau advises periodic retreats from the material and social entanglements of Paris to the rustic simplicities of the

---

59. It goes without saying that characteristics which are found in both primitive *and* modern societies are to be presumed natural. An example would be the prohibition against incest, of which Rousseau interestingly says that "it is no less sacred for being by human institution." (*Languages* IX:272n.) Nor, we might note, is it less natural (in the civil state) for being by human institution.

60. By "negative characteristics" I simply mean those that are defined in terms of absence. An absence of luxury, for example, is a negative characteristic. By "positive characteristics," conversely, I simply mean those that are defined by some presence -- such as the presence of a particular custom. The words are used only for the sake of convenience. They express no judgment as to the significance or the relative value of the characteristics at hand.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

country. The Comtesse d'Houdetot, his addressee, is advised that she will find in the country a freedom and happiness that will diminish her attachment to the vain cares and amusements of corrupt civilization. A physical return to nature will initiate a spiritual return: "Eyes uniquely struck by [the] sweet images of nature reconcile it better with our heart."(1114) Soon the voice of conscience, the voice of nature, will make itself heard. Neither the Comtesse nor we modern readers can reach Emile's level of naturalness, but one does stand to achieve, through simplicity, greater closeness to nature. (Other portraits of a civilized simplicity which falls short of _Emile_'s perfection are found in both _Discourses_, in the _Letter to d'Alembert_ and in the more idyllic scenes of _La Nouvelle Heloise_.)

Among the positive characteristics which Rousseau deems to have been universally present in simpler societies but scorned (unnaturally) in more highly developed ones, the most prominent are those which have to do with sexual mores.[61] Modesty, shame and chastity; male "attack" and

---

61. I am using "mores" in the broad sense, encompassing not only customs and manners but also attitudes and beliefs. "I here mean the term 'mores' to have its original Latin meaning; I mean it to apply not only to mores in the strict sense, which might be called habits of the heart, but also to the different notions possessed by men, the various opinions current among them, and the sum of ideas that shape mental habits." Alexis de Tocqueville, _Democracy in America_, trans. George Lawrence, ed. J.P. Mayer, (Garden City, NY: Anchor Books, 1969), p. 287.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

female "defense"; masculinity and femininity which define themselves in complementary terms, seeing in one another their own fulfillment: these are phenomena which once upon a time were woven into the social fabric (giving it both strength and warmth) but which have lately, and with great consequence, fallen into disrepute. Obviously none of these things is natural in the pure sense. Sex in the state of nature was no more emotionally complicated than eating or drinking: all appetites were merely physical. (SD, 134-37) Just as obviously, however, they *are* natural in the civil state.62 Rousseau makes the point repeatedly and unequivocally in *Emile*, the *Letter to d'Alembert* and the *Lettres morales*, works which evince a practical intention to lend support to the cause of civilized naturalness.63

That sexual modesty et. al. are natural is presumptively established by their being the rule among all who have not suffered the distortions of a noxious education. It is only by the unnatural exertions of a corrupted reason that what we now regard as traditional

---

62. That these mores are natural in the civil state means that they are natural for Emile. They are not part of the naturalness of Jean-Jacques, who, though literate and even social, is not a natural man in the civil state.

For an excellent treatment of the naturalness of modesty et. al. see Schwartz, pp. 33-39. Schwartz also offers an incisive comparison of Emile and Jean-Jacques, the differences between whom are particularly evident in their respective sexuality; see his Chapter Four, especially pp. 74-76 and 98-102.

---

63. See *Emile* V:357-65, *d'Alembert*, 83-90 and *LM*, 1110-11.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

sexual mores have lost ground. Do you not sense the falseness of those who deny that modesty is natural, Rousseau asks the Comtesse d'Houdetot, when "you see it in all its force among the ignorant and rustic peoples and [when you see that] its sweet voice is not stifled in the more cultivated nations except by sophisms of reasoning?" (LM, 1110) This near-universality ought to be enough to convince one of the naturalness of modesty and shame, especially if one experiences them within oneself. To those who ask, "Why should we blush at the needs which nature has given us? Why should we find a motive for shame in an act so indifferent in itself and so beneficial in its effects as the one which leads to the perpetuation of the species?," and who ask why men and women should be governed by different rules in sexual matters, Rousseau responds with his own question:

> Is it not absurd that I should have to say why I am ashamed of a natural sentiment, if this shame is no less natural to me than the sentiment itself? I might as well ask myself why I have the sentiment. Is it for me to justify what nature has done? From this line of reasoning [i.e. the reasoning of those who view chasteness as a convention imposed by and for the sake of fathers and husbands], those who do not see why man exists ought to deny that he exists. (d'Alembert, 83)

That modesty and shame arise within us, that they are overcome if at all only by the determined assault of decadent philosophy or education, ought to tell us that they are natural and therefore worth maintaining in all their force. That ought to be enough: "Is it for me to

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

justify what nature has done?"

But in fact Rousseau does justify what nature has done.64 He begins to do so in the very next paragraph of the Letter and he does so in much greater depth and detail in the opening section of Book V of Emile. And in so doing he confirms the thesis to which the present chapter has been devoted, namely, that the definitive criterion of what is natural in the civil state is that it promote or preserve benign self-love, or amour de soi. To be sure, Rousseau does not make the case in those terms. Instead, he explains in intricate detail how it is that these traditional mores serve to strengthen and sweeten social bonds. (The strengthening is in part a result of the sweetening.) But that purpose is itself subservient to the larger purpose which we have here identified.

In the passages devoted to sexual mores Rousseau argues at one and the same time toward two conclusions: that traditional mores are good for us and that they are natural. The same evidence and the same arguments advance the two conclusions equally. All of these things -- modesty, shame and chastity; the psychological interdependence of the sexes, according to which women are

---

64. Indeed, just as one can read the Second Discourse as a justification of nature or as a kind of theodicy, so too can one read the whole of Rousseau's writings on civilized naturalness as a general justification of nature. Note the very first line of Book I of Emile: "Everything is good as it leaves the hands of the Author of things."(37) (Regarding the Second Discourse, see Scott.)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

to judge the merit of men and men the merit of women; the differentiation of male and female roles not just in matters of love but in all of social life -- all of these things are good for us (both as individuals and as societies) because they enhance the affectional ties between men and women. They enhance the ties from which loving families are made and which represent the only alternative in the modern world to the harsh and resented bonds of egotistic self-interest. And they are natural for the same reason.

The universality of these phenomena among rustic peoples is a fair indication of their naturalness. So too is the fact that most civilized people experience impulses toward them, even if many of us repudiate them on the basis of ill-conceived ideas. But the argument for their naturalness is based on the purpose they serve, on their enhancing affection. The details of Rousseau's argument are beyond our purview and, in any case, they have been admirably explicated elsewhere.[65] What does concern us, though, are the criteria, both explicit and implicit, by which the judgement of naturalness is made. Rousseau explicitly argues for the naturalness of traditional sexual mores on the grounds that they create and support an affectional basis for male-female relations. Female modesty and chastity, for example, are said to be necessary

---

65. See Schwartz, Chapter Two.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

in order to stimulate male desire for and attachment to a single woman. They stoke male desire and then, by denying it easy satisfaction, create the conditions under which it can be sublimated into passionate longing. They also enhance the pleasure of sexual relations, not only in anticipation but also in consummation (Rousseau here purports to trump the hedonistic case for sexual liberation and demystification): Without modesty and chastity, the passions would "languish[] in a boring freedom" (d'Alembert, 84);[66] with them, by contrast, great passions are ignited which intensify pleasure and which themselves contribute mightily to the possibility of a beautiful and nobly enchanting love.

Without modesty and chastity and the rest, sex would not be moralized and so would be less pleasurable and less meaningful. Desire remaining unsublimated, sexual attraction would be dissociated from affection, leading to

---

66. The full passage is worth noting:

"If the two sexes had equally made and received the advances, vain importunity would have never been preserved; the passions, ever languishing in a boring freedom, would have never been excited; the sweetest of all sentiments would hardly have touched the human heart, and its object would have been badly fulfilled. The apparent obstacle, which seems to keep this object at a distance, is in reality what brings it nearer. The desires, veiled by shame, become only the more seductive; in hindering them, chasteness inflames them. Its fears, its tricks, its reserves, its timid avowals, its tender and naive delicacy, say better what chasteness thinks to hide than passion could have said it without chasteness. It is chasteness which lends value to favors granted and sweetness to rejection."(d'Alembert, 84)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

a world in which relations between the sexes would be (if they are not already) relations of exploitation. And exploitation, even when mutual, is a corrupt and dispiriting basis for social relations -- and how much more so when it occurs within the family, where one might have enjoyed "the sweetest sentiments known to men."(SD, 146-47)

Rousseau's explicit reason for considering traditional sexual mores natural is that they promote romantic and conjugal love and discourage debauchery and exploitation. There is much intricate reasoning, there are many intermediate steps and subsidiary conclusions, but all of that reasoning is aimed at establishing that these mores do in fact promote affection between men and women (and, consequently, that they promote loving families). Affection is the announced standard of naturalness. Understandably, Rousseau does not bother to justify this standard: His interest is in pursuading his readers of the enormous value of these mores and of the love that they can help create. If he succeeds at that task, he will have brought his readers nearer to nature; and they will have been persuaded by inner experience, the best of all possible evidence, that the path he recommends is indeed the road of nature. We, however, who seek to uncover and articulate the underlying unity of Rousseau's philosophy of nature, need to consider the unspoken but critical connections within it. We do need to examine the standard

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

and look into its basis. Why affection? Why should Rousseau adopt as his explicit test of naturalness the question of whether something promotes affection between men and women? What we find is that Rousseau uses this more wieldly standard as a way of determining whether various mores promote or protect _amour de soi_, which is his ultimate standard for judging naturalness in civilization. Affection-promotion is a practicable and reliable stand-in for Rousseau's more abstract ultimate standard.

To demonstrate that something promotes affection is less obscure, and is bound to have greater emotional and persuasive force, than demonstrating that it serves the cause of _amour de soi_. That is fairly obvious. Less obvious perhaps is the substantive relation between the two standards, i.e. the subsumption of the former by the latter. How does promoting affection between men and women also promote or protect _amour de soi_?

It does so both indirectly and directly: It tempers _amour-propre_, ensuring that that morally ambiguous variety of self-love will not, weed-like, overrun the ground occupied by benign _amour de soi_ -- mutual affection is mutual recognition, and such recognition satisfies and tames _amour-propre_. And it deepens and extends _amour de soi_ directly by adding to the absolute -- which is to say, the nonrelative, nonrivalrous, noncombative -- love of existence that constitutes the real meaning of that

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

thoroughly natural form of self-love.

Affection between lovers is perhaps unique in the extent to which it engages both sorts of self-love. In no other sphere do conquest and recognition (prizes sought by *amour-propre*) mingle so extensively with selflessness and sympathy (expressions of *amour de soi*). But male-female affection is not unique in the dual nature of its service to *amour de soi*: Most things which qualify as natural in the civil state -- certainly most interesting things which so qualify -- do so because they serve *amour de soi* both directly and indirectly: directly, by deepening the absolute love of existence, indirectly, by limiting *amour-propre*. Of the two, the indirect means is by far the more difficult and complex, both to achieve and to comprehend. It is also the more important means from a practical standpoint: The direct enhancement of *amour de soi* will tend to take care of itself. Or, rather, it would take care of itself if it were not obstructed by the intrusion of *amour-propre* -- which is exactly why the tempering of *amour-propre* is so important from a practical standpoint. Good governance of *amour-propre* is the sine qua non of civilized naturalness. It is, one might almost say, *the* moral and political problem for Rousseau.67

67. Good governance of *amour-propre* is as important to the denaturalized civic life as it is to the natural life. The solutions embodied by these lives are radically different, but the problem to which they respond is the same.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Whatever promotes or preserves amour de soi, whether directly or indirectly, is natural in the civil state. Our effort in this chapter has been to explicate the meaning of this formula and in so doing to confirm that it is indeed an accurate representation of Rousseau's view. Our examples, especially those drawn from the realm of sex and love, were selected because they serve these purposes particularly well. They are not unique but rather paradigmatic. An examination of any other phenomena which Rousseau attaches to Emile or otherwise calls natural would reveal that they, too, serve the cause of amour de soi in one way or another.

The limits of our efforts are suggested by that catch-all, "one way or another." The phrase covers a multitude of intricacies. One could devote many chapters to explaining the ways in which different natural characteristics and activities promote or preserve amour de soi. Short of that, our rendering of Rousseau's philosophy of nature must remain a sketch rather than a detailed portrait. But there also remains a more serious gap, one which keeps even the sketch from being complete and which therefore needs to be addressed: We need to take up the relation between the two kinds of self-love.

I have repeatedly referred to the regulation of amour-propre as an indirect but necessary support of civilized

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

naturalness. That support, it turns out, needs to be positive. However much *amour de soi* is threatened by a lawless *amour-propre* (and the threat is devastating), it actually *needs* the support of a wholesome *amour-propre*. Naturalness requires more than just that *amour-propre* not run wild. It also requires that *amour-propre* lend its force to the cause of naturalness. If this is so -- if, as I am suggesting, the preservation of *amour de soi* in the civil state requires that *amour-propre* be well-governed -- not extirpated, not transcended, not even diluted, but rather well-governed -- then our sketch will not be complete until we have examined the nature of that governance and its results. Here we have arrived at one of the deeper paradoxes in Rousseau's thought. How can the psychic force which constitutes denaturalization in the citizen and which foments perverse unnaturalism in the Parisian be made to support naturalness in Emile? This is the question whose answer will supply the final lines of our sketch.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

CHAPTER FOUR:

THE PROBLEM OF SELF-LOVE

Though barely distinguishable from the animals, the inhabitant of the pure state of nature was a human being. Notwithstanding that he lacked speech, that he was solitary, that his mental abilities differed not at all in kind and only marginally in degree from those of his nonhuman neighbors -- notwithstanding even that he was unable to make meaningful use of his freedom and perfectibility, the very capacities that distinguished him from those neighbors -- notwithstanding all that, he was a natural _man_. Underlying this determination is Rousseau's substitution of freedom and perfectibility for reason and speech as the defining human attributes, a reconceptualization that has proven to be one of the more significant turns in intellectual history. Whether Rousseau intended or even could have foreseen all the paths that he opened is doubtful. Yet even if we subtract the unintended effects and look only at Rousseau's own apparent purposes, his redefinition of humanity still marks a highly consequential departure from the earlier prevailing view. To cite just one major effect, one which we have already

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

encountered in previous chapters, his redefinition justified his using the creature he called "natural man" as a standard of judgment against which to measure the species in its present state. If natural man was indeed a man, then we today can be justly compared with him. If he was a man, his goodness and happiness are conditions that we might legitimately seek to replicate in whatever way and to whatever extent we can.

But the real radicalism of Rousseau's departure, at least from an anthropological point of view, lies less in his according human status to the creature who inhabited the state of nature than in his account of man's leaving that state. For it was in leaving the state of nature and becoming civilized that man became what he now is, what he now irrevocably is.[1] And what he is -- what we are -- is a peculiar combination of benign self-sufficiency and perilous, unquenchable need.

A transformation of indescribable proportions has taken place: The solitary has acquired sociability. It is not just that civilized man lives with others and speaks to them and thinks about them. Nor even that he desires their voluntary recognition. Rather, he has become a social creature in the most fundamental sense: More than just

---

1. There can be no going back to an earlier state of development: "human nature does not go backward, and it is never possible to return to the times of innocence and equality once they have been left behind."(Dialogues II:213)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

living *with* others, he lives *in* and *through* them. "[T]he sociable man, always outside of himself, knows how to live only in the opinion of others; and it is, so to speak, from their judgment alone that he draws the sentiment of his own existence."(*SD*, 179)

We are perhaps accustomed to interpret this observation as a disparaging one. And indeed, the context of the remark would seem to confirm that reading. In fact, though, sociality in and of itself is not a bad thing; living through others, drawing the sentiment of one's existence from one's fellows, is not inherently bad. The socialization of humanity need not have played out as badly as it has -- or badly at all. Rare though they have been, good communities and good men and women attest to this fact. Moreover, even corrupt societies offer something infinitely valuable to those who have remained decent enough to accept it: "O Emile," says the young man's soon to be retired governor, "where is the good man who owes nothing to his country? Whatever country it is, he owes it *what is most precious to man* -- the morality of his actions and the love of virtue."(*Emile* V:473; emphasis added)[2] Rousseau's praise of the potential benefits of social life yields little even to the likes of Aristotle. (Indeed, Rousseau could almost agree that an asocial man must be either less than or more than human.[3]) Still, given the complete facts of the case -- given that it was

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

socialization which opened the way for all of the evil and nearly all of the misery that have so marred the human experience in all subsequent ages -- we must consider that transformation at best a mixed blessing. In truth, a _very_ mixed blessing. And we must deem the quality of soul that emerged with this transformation at best morally ambiguous. That quality of soul, of course, is _amour-propre_.

Many other characteristics appeared with the socialization of the species. A veritable panoply of new capacities and inclinations -- by and large the whole realm

---

2. Rousseau elaborates on the preciousness of acquiring morality (i.e., the value of entering the civil state), at _SC_ I-8:55-56. "This passage from the state of nature to the civil state produces a remarkable change in man, by substituting justice for instinct in his behavior and giving his actions the morality they previously lacked. Only then, when the voice of duty replaces physical impulse and right replaces appetite, does man, who until that time only considered himself, find himself forced to act upon other principles and to consult his reason before heeding his inclinations. Although in this state he deprives himself of several advantages given him by nature, he gains such great ones, his faculties are exercised and developed, his ideas broadened, his feelings ennobled, and his whole soul elevated to such a point that if the abuses of this new condition did not often degrade him beneath the condition he left, he ought ceaselessly to bless the happy moment that tore him away from it forever, and that changed him from a stupid, limited animal into an intelligent being and a man."

---

3. Aristotle, of course, states that it is the _apolitical_ man who must be either less than or more than human: "He who is without a city (_polis_) through nature rather than chance is either a mean sort or superior to man."(_Politics_ I,2,1253a3-5) We should also note one other discrepancy between Rousseau's appreciation of social life and Aristotle's: For Rousseau the highest human type is the solitary dreamer, the man who lives an indolent life of contemplation on the fringes of society. See Section III of the present chapter.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

of the distinctively human -- made their entrance onto the stage either contemporaneously with or as a consequence of that transformation. But of all these new phenomena _amour-propre_ was the decisive one, for it was _amour-propre_ which redefined the human problem. In ways that we shall explore in this chapter, _amour-propre_ redefined the fundamental needs experienced by every civilized human being. The other characteristics that appeared with the socialization of man, as important as they are, were not comparably decisive. They had, and continue to have, great influence both on the way that needs and desires are felt and on the repertoire of available responses to those now deep and complicated passions. But they have not given rise, on their own, to new needs. Only the birth of _amour-propre_, only the emergence of a second fundamental principle of soul,[4] reaches deep enough in the soul to have had that kind of effect.

In according human status to the inhabitant of the state of nature, Rousseau rejected the naturalness of any

---

4. A "principle of soul" is a primary passion or metapassion; it is a source of other passions and motivations. Prior to the birth of _amour-propre_, man's only principle of soul was _amour de soi_. (In the _Second Discourse_, Rousseau refers to pity as a second principle of soul, but pity, as we observed in Chapter Three, ultimately proves to be a manifestation of _amour de soi_, leaving only one basic principle of soul until _amour-propre_ is born.) For a discussion of Rousseau's use of the term, "principle of soul," see Masters, _The Political Philosophy of Rousseau_, pp. 138-44.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

kind of moral or psychological dualism. Together with his self-sufficiency, natural man's outstanding characteristic was his wholeness. He utterly lacked internal conflict. He suffered no conflict between inclination and duty because he knew nothing of -- indeed, had no -- duty. He suffered no conflict _among_ inclinations because these inclinations, deriving from the same, orderly source (namely nature, as expressed in _amour de soi_), were themselves perfectly well ordered with respect to one another. This self-sufficiency and wholeness combined to produce his perfect, even if premoral, goodness. But we who are civilized are no longer whole. In fact, at the deepest level, at the level of primary passions or principles of soul, we are divided in two: in the souls of all but the true citizen (who is virtually nonexistent today) and the thoroughly corrupt man (also a rare personage: most of us are corrupt but are not without some vestige of humane feeling5) there exist, side by side, two different kinds of self-love. Some portion of original

5. Though most people are corrupt, very few are entirely so. In fact, none are without some vestige of moral goodness: "[I]f some act of mercy or of generosity strikes our eyes, what admiration, what love it inspires in us. Who does not say to himself: I would like so much to have done that? The most corrupt souls wouldn't be able to lose this first inclination completely: the thief who robs passersby nevertheless covers the nakedness of the poor; there is no ferocious assassin who would not support a man falling in a faint; even traitors touch each others' hands, give each other their word, and respect their trust."(_LM_, 1107)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

self-love, some portion of _amour de soi_, remains. But the rest of _amour de soi_ -- which in most people means most of it -- has been converted into _amour-propre_. And almost always these very different variants of self-love find themselves at odds with one another in their respective objects of desire and in the very ways in which they shape one's experience of life.

So it would seem that Rousseau is a kind of dualist after all. Man as he is now constituted is possessed of two (and only two) competing motive forces. Moreover, one of these forces is good and thus constitutes the central goal of good education (_Emile_) and worthy moral reform (_Lettres morales_),6 while the other, though not always and necessarily evil, never stops being dangerous -- indeed, potentially calamitous -- and hence needs to be sternly and thoroughly governed. Two principles: one good, the other, if left ungoverned, bad. Formally, at least, the opposition between _amour de soi_ and _amour-propre_ is comparable to the reason-versus-appetite and soul-versus-body polarities found in classical and Christian moral philosophies. Rousseau's scheme is as dualistic as theirs. To be sure, Rousseau rejects the notion that a moral or psychological dualism exists _by nature_. But that is

---

6. That _amour de soi_ is the centerpiece of naturalness and hence the goal of natural education (Emile) and moral reform (_Lettres morales_) was the main point established in Chapter Three.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

precisely the point. Nature is a unity, but nature is only one part of the human soul.

As we shall soon see, there is nothing stark or simple, nothing Manichaean, about Rousseau's dualism. For one thing, the respective dimensions of *amour de soi* and *amour-propre* in the soul is not predetermined. For another, *amour-propre* admits of myriad possibilities: besides being the source of the worst human evils, it has also been the source of the greatest accomplishments. Patriotic citizenship, an altogether glorious human possibility and one that has been realized in the world, is built out of a certain kind of *amour-propre*. And even in the world beyond the virtuous republic, *amour-propre* has produced some wonderful results. To the "furor to distinguish oneself," Rousseau writes, "we owe what is best and worst among men, our virtues and our vices, our sciences and our errors, our conquerors and our philosophers . . . ."(*SD*, 175) And if it turns out the worst has outweighed the best -- and it has: "what is best and worst among men" turns out to mean "a multitude of bad things as against a small number of good ones" -- that still does not mean that a better outcome is impossible. Finally, it may be possible for some people to transcend *amour-propre* and thereby to aquire a kind of natural wholeness that is purer even than Emile's. This may be dualism, but it is a dualism whose range of possibilities

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

can be painted only with a full palette and not merely with shades of gray, let alone just black and white.

I stated in the preceding chapter that the good governance of *amour-propre* should be considered *the* political problem for Rousseau. (It is also the foremost moral and psychological problem, which is what makes it so politically consequential.) We shall begin our study of *amour-propre* by examining why that is so: we shall examine just what is at stake in governing or failing to govern *amour-propre*. Then, in the second section of the chapter, we shall inquire into the precise natures of *amour de soi* and *amour-propre* and into the relation between them. We shall attempt a more precise understanding of these critical but none-too-well understood concepts and their respective roles in a well-ordered soul. Finally, in the third section, we shall explore the possibility of transcending *amour-propre*, the possibility represented by Jean-Jacques and the one which Rousseau seems to consider the highest available to man.

I. THE STAKES

Why is the good governance of *amour-propre* so important? The answer is threefold. First, the appearance of *amour-propre* is inevitable in every socialized human

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

being. In fact, not only *amour-propre* but even vanity, its most obnoxious expression, is inevitable in everyone. Second, *amour-propre* is morally ambiguous. As we have seen, it can produce either great evil or great good depending on how it is educated. Third, the specific character of one's *amour-propre* will be the decisive factor in determining one's character and behavior, including political behavior. It is passion which determines behavior and it is self-love which determines passion. And not just self-love, but *amour-propre* in particular: while *amour de soi* does give rise to a variety of sentiments, it is *amour-propre* which is the source of virtually all strong social and political passions. *Amour-propre* admits of myriad forms -- it is not just a question of pride versus vanity but also of what *kind* of pride or vanity -- and the specific form that it takes will ultimately determine the things that one does.

A. *Amour-propre*'s Inevitability

That Rousseau believes in the inevitability of *amour-propre* in every socialized human being is indisputable. What is at issue in the lives of men is not whether, but rather when and in what form *amour-propre* will make its appearance. And even these questions are open only to a point. It is possible to prevent *amour-propre*'s emergence

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

in a child, but once adolescence has begun and has given the young person an irresistable interest in others, it is only a matter of time -- a short time -- before sexual desire and self-consciousness combine to stimulate its appearance:

> This species of passion, not having its germ in children's hearts, cannot be born in them of itself; it is we alone who put it there, and it never takes root except by our fault. But this is no longer the case with the young man's heart. Whatever we may do, these passions [i.e. pride and vanity, the two branches of amour-propre7] will be born in spite of us. (Emile IV:215)

As for the question of what form this nascent amour-propre will take, it seems that this too is only partly controllable even by the best education. One might prefer to raise a child who will be completely free of vanity and whose amour-propre will express itself only in the form of a wholesome pride, but this is simply not possible. Rousseau says the following of vanity, emulation and glory: "These dangerous sentiments will, I am told, be born sooner or later in spite of us. I do not deny it. Everything has its time and its place. I only say that one ought not to assist their birth."(Emile IV:226) The goal of a natural education is not, therefore, to prevent the birth of amour-propre. The goal, rather, is to delay its appearance and to shape it into as wholesome a form as possible. (The hope is to delay amour-propre's appearance until

---

7. Rousseau's reference to pride and vanity as "the two branches of amour-propre" appears at Corsica, 326.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

adolescence, by which time reason and conscience will have developed sufficiently to manage it.) No one, not even the man in whom _amour-propre_ is least present, is _utterly_ free of it.8

The inevitability of _amour-propre_ and the difficulty in delaying it are suggested by Rousseau's choice of language to describe its initial appearance. The verb he most commonly uses to describe the appearance of _amour-propre_ is "awaken" (_eveiller_).9 And in the lines quoted above he speaks of _amour-propre_ as something that will inevitably "be born." Birth of course implies gestation. The suggestion conveyed by both terms is that _amour-propre_ is somehow ready to appear, that is, that it awaits only some triggering circumstance to precipitate its appearance. And indeed this is exactly Rousseau's view. It seems that _amour-propre_ is latent almost from infancy. And it is, so to speak, only barely latent, at that. It is not a deep slumber but rather a very light sleep from which _amour-_

8. The evidence is quite clear that Jean-Jacques, who is that man, has at the very least a residual, latent _amour-propre_. See, for example, _Dialogues_ II:145: Jean-Jacques "is himself and on his own all day every day. And in the evening when he relaxes and walks, his soul leaves its calm only to surrender to delectable emotions without any cost to himself and without upholding the burden of celebrity by brilliant or learned conversations which would be the torment of his life _without soothing his vanity_." That Jean-Jacques is the man in whom _amour-propre_ is least present, and that he does yet have some _amour-propre_, will be further established in Section III.

9. See, for example, _Emile_ I:68 and III:178.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

propre is awakened. It is a sleep that can be interrupted easily and early. And it is not a sleep which, once seriously interrupted, can be resumed. That is why Rousseau warns repeatedly against doing anything that might prematurely awaken _amour-propre_ -- as, for example, when he admonishes parents not to submit to the small child's arbitrary will: "Dominion awakens and flatters _amour-propre_" even in the young innocent.(_Emile_ I:68) (He offers parents several maxims aimed at maintaining _amour-propre_'s sleep in the small child.10) That is also why Emile's governor arranges for the young man's first expression of vanity to be met with stunning humiliation:

> How many mortifying consequences are attracted by the first movement of vanity! Young master, spy out this first movement with care. If you know thus how to make humiliation and disgrace arise from it, be sure that a second movement will not come for a long time. (_Emile_ III:175)11

By doing nothing that might incite the taste for dominion and by ensuring that a first stirring of vanity will not

---

10. The maxims are: (1) Let him use all his strength; (2) Help him in all that is connected with physical need; (3) Limit this help to the really useful -- grant nothing to whim; and (4) Study his language and signs in order to distinguish which of his desires come from nature and which from opinion. "The spirit of these rules is to accord children more true freedom and less dominion . . ."(_Emile_ I:68)

---

11. The story of Emile's first vanity and his resulting humiliation is told at III:173-75. (For a summary description of this episode, see Chapter Two, note 13, above.) Note that the tutor's role in arranging Emile's humiliation is hidden. Emile must never knowingly experience punishment or any other coercive expression of his tutor's will.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

soon be followed by a second, the parent or governor can see to it that _amour-propre_ is not awakened until late adolescence, by which time the basis of a good moral character -- one in which _amour-propre_ might be well governed -- will have been laid.

Delay is necessary: the child in whom _amour-propre_ awakens early will likely be dominated by unwholesome _amour-propre_ later in life. Only when reason and conscience have had time to develop sufficiently is it possible to steer _amour-propre_ into wholesome channels. But delay is not enough: to ensure that _amour-propre_ will assume a wholesome form (e.g. a pride founded on virtue) it must itself be educated once it has begun to develop. Prior to adolescence, Emile's education is largely aimed at preventing the early awakening of _amour-propre_: that is the essential meaning of Rousseau's maxim that "the first education ought to be purely negative."(II:93) But with the onset of adolescence -- with the first inchoate stirring of sexual desire -- negative education must be replaced by something else. The tutor must now become something of a Mentor.12 To be sure, he still does not teach by conventional precept (or even by unconventional precept, for that matter). But he does now educate in a much more positive way. With the threads of the young

---

12. The comparison to Mentor, tutor to Telemachus, is Rousseau's own. See _Dialogues_ II:90.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

man's new and as yet indeterminate longing, the tutor weaves for him -- and weaves _into_ him -- an image of beauty. He makes Emile fall in love with an ideal woman (how much further from negative education can one get?). This causes Emile to search for the embodiment of this ideal and then, after he finds her, to seek her favor. A consequence of this quest is that his _amour-propre_ manifests itself in a wholesome way. For Sophie is of such character that her recognition cannot be won -- and thus Emile's _amour-propre_ cannot be satisfied -- except by his exhibiting pride and virtue rather than vanity. Sophie and the tutor, in other words, reinforce the resistance to vanity that Emile's negative education had already sown.

B. _Amour-propre_'s Ambiguity

Amour-propre needs to be so extensively educated precisely because it is so protean a force in the human soul. Protean and potent: It can be good or bad; it can be good _and_ bad; it cannot be neutral. Its moral ambiguity is the ambiguity of a high-octane fuel: once ignition occurs it can be used either for productive or for destructive purposes, depending upon the quality of the engine (i.e. the quality of the psyche that was produced by early education) and upon the skill and wisdom of the operator (i.e. the character of the person's will). What it cannot

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

do is nothing.

Would it be best if it _could_ be made to do nothing? Should we look upon _amour-propre_ as an unavoidable evil? Clearly it serves a major and good purpose in the _citizen_: his patriotism, the source of his identity, is but a particular form of extended or generalized _amour-propre_. But what about for the natural man in the state of society? He, after all, has been defined in the previous two chapters as one in whom, not _amour-propre_, but rather _amour de soi_ is the predominant principle of soul. Is _amour-propre_ simply a burden or obstacle for him -- and for us, for whom he serves as a model?

The answer, in brief, is no, _amour-propre_ is not simply an unavoidable evil from the standpoint of the civilized natural man. For all its evils, _amour-propre_ is a necessary condition for many good things, things which give his life much of its pleasure, most of its meaning and virtually all of its nobility. To begin with, a certain measure of _amour-propre_ is necessary for him to be able to know "the sweetest sentiments known to men: conjugal love and paternal love."(_SD_, 146-47) A domestic life infused with the sweetness of conjugal and familial love is possible only on the basis of romantic attraction -- which is to say, only where sentiments of preference and the desire to be preferred have appeared -- which is to say, only after _amour-propre_ has been born. In a hypothetical

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

world without _amour-propre_ there could be friendship and there still would be sexuality; there might even be sexual friendships. But there could be no true romance, for that would require efforts aimed at and satisfactions gained from being beloved, from being preferred. The lover's pleasure comes less from favors granted than from the granting -- less from the favors in themselves than from his being chosen as the one to receive the favors of his beloved. Minus _amour-propre_, being so chosen would have no meaning and thus would be enormously less pleasurable. Without _amour-propre_, then, there would be no romance, surely a loss in itself notwithstanding the agonies that frequently attach to it; and there would be no conjugal and paternal love, an even surer loss in Rousseau's view (surer in that familial love poses much less risk of pain than does romance), for those "sweetest sentiments" can arise only from a nuptial bed that has been made by romance.13

We might also recall in this connection that the historic period which Rousseau considers "the happiest and most durable epoch," "the best for man," was an era in which _amour-propre_ was present. (_SD_, 151) The reference, of course, is to the epoch of nascent society. During that period the souls of men and women were possessed of a newborn and as yet moderate _amour-propre_, which enabled them to enjoy one another immensely and which did not lead them into the chronic rancor that a more perversely

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

developed _amour-propre_ would produce among their descendants. The men and women of that era had enough _amour-propre_ to make them appreciate being loved but not so much that they were plagued by its worst ills. They suffered as yet only minimal quantities of vanity, contempt, shame and envy, the "new leavens" which only later, in consequence of "some fatal accident," would ferment into "compounds fatal to happiness and innocence."(_SD_, 149, 151) Their small portion of _amour-propre_ was on balance a boon. We, of course, who are so much more materially and psychologically interdependent than they, are not likely to reduce _amour-propre_ to the modest proportions it assumed in them; even Emile's _amour-propre_ is larger and more refined than theirs (Emile "is a savage made to inhabit _cities_," not the tribal villages of that earlier period (III:205)). Nevertheless their example

---

13. Rousseau does not say that conjugal love exists only where it has been preceded by as intense a romance as Emile's and Sophie's. It may be possible to replicate the experience of men and women in the stage of nascent society, a period during which there seems to have been conjugal love but perhaps not so much romantic ecstasy. Yet even if it would be possible to build domestic felicity on a basis other than romantic passion, it would seem extremely difficult, for without romantic love there is little to protect civilized men against the kind of moral dissipation that would seriously undermine the possibility of domestic happiness. What's more, and this clinches the point, conjugal love itself, apart from the romantic love that might or might not have preceded it, depends on _amour-propre_. Even where love is quiet and calm, as long as it has a sexual dimension, it involves sentiments of preference and so requires _amour-propre_. It is not only in the heated early stages of a relationship that one wants to be desired.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

is enormously significant, for it demonstrates that the existence of amour-propre does not in principle preclude happiness and decency. And it is that knowledge which serves as Rousseau's crucial premise: It is that knowledge that makes Emile plausible. And Emile, as it turns out, enjoys an even better condition with regard to amour-propre than they did. For while his amour-propre is indeed larger and more refined than theirs was, it is wholesomely refined and so produces an even more enviable soul. Whereas they represent the happiest epoch known so far, Emile, I believe, represents the happiest we might yet be.14

Romantic and familial love are not the only goods which depend upon amour-propre. Virtue is another. Given that virtue is exercised only against inclinations, it is not to be wondered at that its source is to be found outside of the realm of nature, outside the realm of amour de soi. Why does one practice virtue? Why would one repudiate desire in favor of an abstract principle (and virtue always is the servant of abstract principle: Rousseau defines it as "obedience to law," or conforming to the general will15)? The only answer that accords with

---

14. A qualification: The happiness that Emile represents is the happiest available to "ordinary minds." That which is available to someone with the natural gifts of Jean-Jacques would seem to be the greatest of all.

---

15. The description of virtue as obedience to law appears at SC I-8:56. The description of virtue as the conformity of one's private will to the general will is found at PE, 218.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Rousseau's belief that all behavior is motivated by self-love is that those who practice virtue do so because they derive, or at least expect to derive, more satisfaction from doing so than from not doing so. This is in fact Rousseau's view, as we saw in Chapter Two. What we can now add to that earlier discussion is that the satisfaction achieved by the practice of virtue is a satisfaction that derives from a certain kind of amour-propre. In fact, there are at least two different satisfactions that virtue can bring, each of which is rooted in amour-propre. For most who are virtuous, the satisfaction of practicing virtue is the satisfaction of receiving recognition. "What was the motive of the virtue of the Lacedaemonians if not to be esteemed virtuous?"(Fragments, 501)16 Unless a society has reached the depths of corruption, there will remain in it many who, although not virtuous themselves, at least admire virtue when they see it. The other satisfaction of practicing virtue is more rare; it is the reward and motivation of those who practice virtue amid a thoroughly corrupt, unappreciative society. There, where practicing virtue does not win the esteem of others, the satisfaction of practicing virtue is a wholly interior one. The virtuous man has enough pride, and the right kind of pride (i.e. a pride based on his attaining a certain level

---

16. It is not only the Spartan whose practice of virtue is motivated by the desire for recognition. Even the wise man "is not insensitive to glory."(FD, 58)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

of virtue), that the conditions of his self-esteem require him to practice virtue. Or, to put it more pointedly, he cannot succeed in loving himself unless he meets certain conditions, namely, that he practice virtue.

Rousseau's works are full of instances in which _amour-propre_, always in the form of pride, is put to good moral use. "Let us extend _amour-propre_ to other beings," he writes. "We shall transform it into a virtue, and there is no man's heart in which this virtue does not have its root."(_Emile_ IV:252) The virtue to which he refers in this case is beneficence, which is a kind of generalized and rationalized pity. Pity itself, being an expression of _amour de soi_, is an instance of goodness rather than virtue. But with the help of _amour-propre_ pity can be transformed -- can be rationalized and moralized -- into beneficence.

> To prevent pity from degenerating into weakness, it must . . . be generalized and extended to the whole of mankind. Then one yields to it only insofar as it accords with justice, because of all the virtues justice is the one that contributes most to the common good of men. For the sake of reason, for the sake of love of ourselves, we must have pity for our species still more than for our neighbor, and pity for the wicked is a very great cruelty to men.(253)

Like all other virtues -- and beneficence is a virtue since it comes of rationalizing and generalizing an inclination that was originally neither rational nor general -- beneficence is rooted in self-love. It offers "inner enjoyment," Rousseau tells us in the next paragraph, the

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

same enjoyment that one gains from exercising pity.

In fact, _amour-propre_ not only helps to generalize and extend pity, it also helps to cultivate pity in the first place. Pity, as we saw in the previous chapter, is an expression of _amour de soi_, not _amour-propre_. Nevertheless, it seems that _amour de soi_ in this case requires the service of _amour-propre_; pity may be natural, but this is one of the cases in which "[o]ne must use a great deal of art to prevent social man from being totally artificial."(_Emile_ IV:317). Emile _can_ pity, first, because he understands himself to be vulnerable to suffering and thus identifies with those who do suffer, and, second, because he does not suffer much himself and thus is not overtaken by envy.17 But he _does_ pity, at least in part, because it feels good to do so. Pitying others confirms his good opinion of himself: it buttresses or enhances his self-esteem. "[C]ommiseration ought to be a very sweet sentiment," Rousseau tells us, "_since it speaks well of us_."(_Emile_ IV:229)18

Nor is Emile alone in being made better by _amour-_

---

17. For a concise description of Rousseau's four-part psychic mechanism of compassion, see Bloom, "Introduction," p. 18.

18. That _amour-propre_ plays such an important role in inculcating the habit of pity does not alter the fact that the source of pity, i.e., the "stuff" of which it is made, is _amour de soi_. _Amour-propre_'s role is that of buttress and facilitator. Others have made the same general point, albeit with different notions of the particulars. See, for example, Horowitz, p. 237, and Melzer, p. 93.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

propre. Sophie is another who benefits from it, and in ways unique to her sex. (Presumably she also benefits from it in all the non-sex-specific ways that Emile does.) She needs _amour-propre_ -- specifically, she needs pride -- to maintain her chastity. It is only her proud sense that she merits a man as meritorious as herself that keeps her from yielding to the advances of lesser men and even from yielding too soon to Emile's. It takes pride to resist the impulses of so passionate a nature as hers.

> Possessing the temperament of an Italian woman and the sensitivity of an Englishwoman, Sophie combines with them -- in order to control her heart and her senses -- the pride of a Spanish woman, who, even when she is seeking a lover, does not easily find one she esteems worthy of her.(V:402)

Both Sophie and Emile are proud, and each has a sense of honor, as well.(V:417-18) In each, _amour-propre_ enriches and safeguards the fruits of a natural education.

Amour-propre also has moral uses in people who lack the integrity and naturalness of an Emile or a Sophie. Rousseau's various accounts of his own life testify to this. In _Emile_, for example, we hear the story of how the Savoyard Vicar deliberately and successfully used the young Rousseau's _amour-propre_ to save him from complete corruption. The vicar encounters a young man whom injustice and misfortune have degraded and depraved nearly beyond hope of recovery.

> To protect the unfortunate young fellow from this moral death to which he was so near, the priest began by awakening _amour-propre_ and self-esteem in him. He

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

> showed him a happier future in the good employment of his talents. He reanimated a generous ardor in his heart by the account of others' noble deeds. In making the boy admire those who had performed them, the priest gave him the desire to perform like deeds. To detach him gradually from his idle and vagrant life, he had the boy make extracts from selected books; and, feigning to need these extracts, he fed the noble sentiment of gratitude in him. He instructed him indirectly by these books. He made the boy regain a good enough opinion of himself so as not to believe he was a being useless for anything good and so as not to want any longer to make himself contemptible in his own eyes.(IV:264)

The vicar uses _amour-propre_ to awaken in the young Rousseau a pride which demands that he have integrity if he wishes to maintain a good opinion of himself. The particulars of this usage are utterly at variance with the techniques that this same young man would one day use upon his imaginary Emile. Emile is deliberately kept from the kind of heroic reading which the vicar assigns to Rousseau. But that is only a measure of how different are the needs, and how different are the remaining potentials, of these two young men, of whom one is already compromised by a rampant and mostly ugly _amour-propre_ while the other has remained free of such taint through childhood and youth. What works for Emile is simply irrelevant to the case of the young Rousseau. The preventive measures that constitute Emile's negative education would be meaningless for one in whom prevention is no longer possible -- as meaningless as innoculating a person already infected by a virus. Unlike Emile, the young Rousseau needed to be treated for a moral virus; and treating a virus is entirely

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

different from preventing one. (There is at least one telling similarity between treatment and prevention, though. In each case, the healthful agent is also a dangerous one: "*Amour-propre* is a useful but dangerous instrument."(IV:244) Thus the vicar, even as he encourages pride in the young Rousseau, also tempers it.(IV:265) And thus the tutor, even as he promotes some kinds of pride in Emile, also recognizes that another kind of pride is "the error most to be feared."(IV:245)[19]

We also find instances of *amour-propre*'s moral usefulness in the *Confessions*. By his own admission, Rousseau was not a virtuous man. But he recounts occasions in his life in which he was led by *amour-propre* to behave virtuously. In one such instance he was inspired by the sight of a Roman ruin to pass up a fairly seamy assignation. After several hours of "ravishing contemplation" of the ruin, the Pont du Gard, and then days of agitated reflection, he resolved to pass up an encounter

19. "Emile, in considering his rank in the human species and seeing himself so happily placed there, will be tempted to honor his reason for the work of yours and to attribute his happiness to his own merit. He will say to himself, 'I am wise, and men are mad.' In pitying them, he will despise them; in congratulating himself, he will esteem himself more, and in feeling himself to be happier than them, he will believe himself worthier to be so. This is the error most to be feared, because it is the most difficult to destroy. If he remained in this condition, he would have gained little from all our care; and if one had to choose, I do not know whether I would not prefer the illusion of the prejudices to that of pride."(IV:245) For more on the dangers of pride, see pages 318-20, below.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

which would have been unworthy of the noble aspirations inspired by the ruin.

> I executed [this resolution] courageously, with a few sighs, I own; but also with that inward satisfaction I tasted for the first time in my life, when I could say to myself, I deserve my own esteem; I can prefer my duty to pleasures. This was the first real obligation I had to reading. That it was which taught me to reflect and compare. After having adopted principles so pure not long before, after those rules of wisdom and virtue I had made myself, and that I felt myself so ambitious to follow, the shame of being so little consistent with myself, of belying so soon and so openly my own maxims, got the better of pleasure: _pride had, perhaps, as great a share in my resolution as virtue; but if this pride is not virtue, it produces effects so like it, the mistake is pardonable_. (VI:234; emphasis added)

Pride, a form of _amour-propre_, produced in Rousseau a moment of moral reformation. And not just one moment. In fact, it would later produce a moral transformation of six years' duration, a period in which "noble pride" would take root in his heart "amongst the ruins of extirpated vanity"(IX:398) -- and a period during which the passion for virtue, if not virtue itself, would find expression in some of the most inspired political writings the world has seen.20 Thus, just as it can serve a vital moral purpose in an Emile or a Sophie, _amour-propre_ can also be instrumental in improving a more checkered character.

Nor are _amour-propre_'s moral contributions limited to nay-saying virtue. Without _amour-propre_, there would be no moral heroism or even strong moral passion. We are inclined, as readers of Rousseau, to look upon virtue as a necessary substitute for lost goodness. But virtue -- or

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

at least virtue fueled by passion -- goes much further than goodness. As a moral force, goodness is largely negative. The merely good man does no harm, but neither does he fight injustice. His main response to injustice is sadness and disdain. Where there is only goodness -- where there is only *amour de soi* -- there will be no passionate hatred of injustice and hence no rebellion against it. The passion for justice that is great enough to battle for it is born not of *amour de soi* but only of *amour-propre*. This point emerges with great clarity from the following description of Rousseau's own self-love:

> It [my self-love] began by revolting against injustice but finished by disdaining it. By withdrawing into my soul and severing the external relations which make it demanding, by renouncing comparisons and preferences, it was satisfied with my being good in my own eyes. Then, *again becoming amour de soi*, it returned to the natural order . . . (*Reveries* VIII:115-16; emphasis added)

Only while it was *amour-propre* did Rousseau's self-love lead him to raise his hand against injustice. As it was transformed back into *amour de soi*, it lost its moral

---

20. The period of Rousseau's moral transformation lasted from 1749 to 1754 or 1755 ("it lasted almost six years" (*Confessions* IX:399)), during which time he composed both *Discourses* and conceived of his entire philosophic system. Not everyone, of course, is willing to accept Rousseau's interpretation of his transformation. Carol Blum, for example, suggests that it represented a way for Rousseau to satisfy a lifelong dream of being, and being seen as, extraordinary. See *Rousseau and the Republic of Virtue* (Ithaca: Cornell University Press, 1986, pp. 40-43. Ironically enough, Blum's interpretation shares with Rousseau's own an emphasis on *amour-propre* as the underlying source of the transformation.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

passion.

The lesson of Rousseau's experience is confirmed by that of two other exemplars, Cato and Socrates. Cato, Rousseau's exemplary citizen, was the embodiment of the finest kind of amour-propre. Socrates, by contrast, though not as free of amour-propre as Jean-Jacques would later be, was still free of its grip to a remarkable degree.21 Both men found themselves living under tyranny, but they responded entirely differently. Cato hated his tyranny and fought against it. As a citizen, as a man whose self-love was love of self as part of a greater whole, he could not tolerate corruption of that whole. Socrates, on the other hand, did not fight against the tyranny he faced, though he certainly did disdain it and willingly risked his life by disobeying its command. Socrates' self-love was much more a love of self as a self-sufficient whole. Consequently, the corruption of the city, while lamentable, did not taint him personally. Nor did it impinge upon his most important freedom, his natural freedom: he "was able to live under the Tyrants because he was very certain of conserving his freedom everywhere."22 Certainly Rousseau admires

---

21. For a discussion of Rousseau's views of Cato and Socrates and how they compare to himself, see Christopher Kelly, Rousseau's Exemplary Life: The Confessions as Political Philosophy (Ithaca: Cornell University Press, 1987), pp. 50-57 and 64-75.

22. This fragment appears in Jean-Jacques entre Socrate et Caton, ed. Claude Pinchois et Rene Pintard (Paris: Jose Corti, 1972), p. 54.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Socrates. But if we want evil to be combatted, we need Cato's virtue more than Socrates' -- we need the moral passion that only amour-propre can inspire.23

Understanding that the psychological seat of virtue and moral passion is amour-propre -- more specifically, pride -- Rousseau advises those who hope to achieve good republican government to encourage pride. Pride alone can provide the basis for widespread civic virtue and public-spiritedness. Rousseau's prescriptive political writings, most notably the Constitutional Project for Corsica, advise measures explicitly aimed at having this effect.24

But let us not overstate the case. Certainly all of the foregoing is true: Amour-propre has its uses. But these uses and the benefits derived therefrom have not outweighed the harm done by amour-propre in every era

---

23. See Melzer, pp. 256-61, for an enlightening discussion of the necessity of amour-propre for moral action. Melzer interprets Rousseau's authorial activity in this light.

24. See Corsica, 325-29. What is explicitly advised in Corsica is implicitly advised elsewhere. As Ruth Grant observes, "Rousseau hopes to use pride precisely in order to inculcate integrity." (This appears in Chapter Five of the manuscript, Hypocrisy and Idealism: Machiavelli, Rousseau, and Modern Politics. (Forthcoming from the University of Chicago Press.)) Indeed, the inculcation of pride as a source of public-spiritedness can be seen as the centerpiece of the civic ethos, i.e., as the key to successful republicanism, in Rousseau's view. As Judith Shklar writes, "The civic ethos . . . redirects amour-propre from pursuing personal exploitation to positive public enterprises. The whole political structure of Sparta has no other end." Men and Citizens, p. 19.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

subsequent to the epoch of nascent society. Rousseau tells us this explicitly, as we have already observed. Moreover, there is no getting around the fact that most of the problems that *amour-propre* can help to solve by promoting virtuous behavior are themselves products of *amour-propre*. *Amour-propre* may be a source of virtue, but it is also the source of vice. Rousseau's genius is to find *amour-propre*-based remedies for the moral ills caused by *amour-propre*, much as the framers of the American Constitution purported to offer "a republican remedy for the diseases most incident to republican government."[25] But alas, Rousseau's *amour-propre* is not as fundamentally decent a thing as Madison et. al.'s republicanism. The situation is more grave, the prospects grimmer.

How, then, shall we assess the situation? How should we view *amour-propre*? In the end, very simply, we are left with a great and momentous ambiguity. *Amour-propre* produces more bad than good, but at least some of the good that it produces is essential to a good life, or at least to the variants of the good life that are available to an ordinary person. Without it, we would not know the pleasures of romance and marriage. Without it, we would be stripped of the special dignity that is conferred on us by our attaining virtue; for virtue does more than just

25. *The Federalist Papers*, introduction by Clinton Rossiter (New York: New American Library, 1961), No. 10, p. 84.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

counter vice, it also elevates one's level of existence. And, finally, there is this: Even if it turns out that the best life possible for man is one in which amour-propre plays no role -- and such, I think, is in fact Rousseau's view -- that life can only be realized by passing through and then transcending amour-propre. Even if amour-propre is not present in such a life, it once was present, and necessarily so. For the central activities of this life entail the use of faculties which could only have developed amid society, which means, amid the presence of amour-propre. But that is a matter to which we shall return in the final section of this chapter.

C. Amour-propre's Influence on Character and Behavior

As we observed in Chapter Three, Rousseau believes that there is a universal, fixed human nature. "Man," he writes, "is the same in all stations."(Emile IV:225) "Our true study" in Emile, he says, "is that of the human condition"(I:42) -- a single condition common to all members of the species. He even maintains that standards of right and wrong, deriving as they do from this fixed nature, are themselves fixed: "Throughout the ages the natural relations do not change, and the standards of what is or is not suitable that result from them remain the same."(V:391)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

But there is also tremendous variation of character among individuals, and much variation across national borders and across the centuries as well. Rousseau refers to "the almost infinite division of characters" among individuals of the same class and nation.(*Emile* IV:226-27) He marvels at "how much one individual can differ from another due to the force of education."(IV:254) He claims that men differ considerably according to nationality (he even ridicules the adage "that men are everywhere the same"26) and he contends that they have differed still more considerably according to the age in which they lived. (V:453-54) Fixed or not, human nature permits enormous individual variation -- indeed, more variation than has yet been realized: "We do not know what our nature permits us to be."(I:62) Accordingly, the legislator and other political actors are urged to proceed almost as if human nature were not in fact fixed and one. The legislator is advised to act as if it were malleable: "One who dares to undertake the founding of a people should feel that he is capable of changing human nature, so to speak."(*SC* II-7:68) And those concerned with the good governance of a particular people are counseled to be mindful of the particular character of that people rather some general idea of human nature:

> Man is one; I admit it! But man modified by religions, governments, laws, customs, prejudices, and

26. *SD*, 211, n. j.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

> climates becomes so different from himself that one ought not to seek among us for what is good for men in general, but only what is good for them in this time or that country. (*d'Alembert*, 17)

What is the cause of all this variation? In the lines quoted above Rousseau cites education, nationality, culture, even climate. But if we were to search out the medium through which each of these factors exerts its influence on human character, we would find *amour-propre* at the center every time. We would have to: *Amour-propre* is the major constitutive element of our characters and the source of most of our behavior.

> The great springs of human conduct come down, on close examination, to two, pleasure and vanity; and what is more, if you subtract from the first all that appertains to the second, you will find in the last analysis that everything comes down to practically pure vanity. (*Corsica*, 325)

If nearly all behavior is motivated by *amour-propre* (vanity), then no effort to reform behavior is likely to succeed except insofar as it acts upon *amour-propre*. Only the good governance of *amour-propre* is apt to render any significant benefit.

Amour-propre's significance in Rousseau's interpretation of human character and behavior can be established by any number of textual citations. The lines quoted from the *Constitutional Project for Corsica* are exceptional only in their combination of simplicity and categorical scope; the basic idea they express is not exceptional: it finds voice in all of Rousseau's major

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

works. But perhaps the most effective way to demonstrate _amour-propre_'s significance, certainly more effective than heaping up quotations and citations that have been lifted from their contexts, lies in another direction. For all its complexity, Rousseau's motivational psychology is built around a small handful of simple and unambiguously stated propositions. Taken together and stated in the following way, these propositions constitute something close to a formal proof of _amour-propre_'s predominance in human affairs.

The first proposition is that "passions are the motive of all action"; "it is only passion which makes us act."(_Dialogues_ I:9, _Emile_ III:183) This is not a merely formal or truistic tenet. With it, Rousseau pointedly denies that unaided reason can rule in the soul. Reason, he contends, cannot be made to direct behavior unless it has first enlisted passion into its service, and this it can only have done on passion's own terms.27

The second proposition is that all passions derive from self-love. Self-love (of either variety) is itself a passion, but a passion so basic and general that it ordinarily expresses itself through other, more specific passions:

The source of our passions, the origin and the

27. Here is the complete sentence, of which we read only the second part: "In vain does tranquil reason make us approve or criticize; it is only passion which makes us act."(_Emile_ III:183)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

> principle of all the others, the only one born with man and which never leaves him so long as he lives is self-love -- a primitive, innate passion, which is anterior to every other, and of which all others are in a sense only modifications. (_Emile_ IV:212-13)

The term translated as "self-love" in this passage is "_amour de soi_." But what Rousseau says here about _amour de soi_ is also partially true of _amour-propre_. Originally, or by nature, self-love is exclusively _amour de soi_. _Amour-propre_, like every other passion, grows out of, or is a modification of, _amour de soi_. Yet _amour-propre_ is fundamentally different from all those other passions and is functionally similar to _amour de soi_. Though it is born of _amour de soi_, it immediately assumes the status of rival rather than servant or minister. Like _amour de soi_, _amour-propre_ is so basic and general that it ordinarily needs to express itself through other, more specific passions. (At times Rousseau does seem to speak of _amour-propre_ as the immediate source of behavior, but when he does so it is because he is dropping his careful philosophic usage in favor of conventional usage, according to which "_amour-propre_" is roughly synonymous with "vanity."28)

The third proposition is that there are indeed only two basic varieties of self-love. Every passion and behavior arises either from _amour de soi_ or from _amour-propre_. Or from both: many passions are complex and express tendencies born of both varieties of self-love. (The most obvious example of such complexity is surely the

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

sexual passion, in which the physical element and the gentle element arise from <u>amour de soi</u> while the parts which entail preference or the desire for preference, what Rousseau calls the "moral" side of love and attraction, arise from <u>amour-propre</u>.) But the strands of even the most tangled passions grow out of only two sources. Rousseau never makes reference to a third possibility. His discussions of self-love wind their way through a universe of only two basic possibilities: his comparisons are always between two variants, and the way in which the comparisons are made makes it quite clear that these two variants together constitute the whole range of possibilities. Two well-known examples should suffice to make the point. (We shall return to these passages when we examine the respective natures of the two kinds of self-love; for now let us concentrate on establishing that these two are

---

28. Rousseau employs the conventional usage fairly frequently, at least in his earlier writings. Thus, the Masters' consistent rendering of <u>amour-propre</u> as "vanity" in their original translation of the <u>Second Discourse</u> is not inaccurate all that much of the time. With regard to <u>Emile</u> and other later works, however, it would be a serious error to read "vanity" for <u>amour-propre</u>. The best course, the one taken in Bloom's translation of <u>Emile</u>, is not to translate the term at all. I have followed this course in the present work, frequently replacing a translator's "self-esteem" or "self-love" with the original, untranslated French. (Roger Masters himself, it should be noted, recognizes that "vanity" is an imprecise rendering of <u>amour-propre</u>. See <u>The Political Philosophy of Rousseau</u>, p. 40, n. 187. Moreover, this confusion has been corrected in the slightly modified version of the Masters translation that now appears in <u>The Collected Writings of Rousseau</u>, edited by Masters himself along with Christopher Kelly (Hanover, New Hampshire: University Press of New England).)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

indeed the only two.) The first passage appears deep in the notes to the *Second Discourse* and is Rousseau's earliest systematic treatment of self-love:

> *Amour-propre* and *amour de soi*, two passions very different in their nature and their effects, must not be confused. *Amour de soi* is a natural sentiment which inclines every animal to watch over its own preservation, and which, directed in man by reason and modified by pity, produces humanity and virtue. *Amour-propre* is only a relative sentiment, artificial and born in society, which inclines each individual to have a greater esteem for himself than for anyone else, inspires in men all the harm they do to one another, and is the true source of honor. (Note "o", 221-22)[29]

The second passage, drawn from *Emile*, proceeds in similar fashion. Here, too, the clear implication is that there are but two kinds of self-love:

> *Amour de soi*, which regards only ourselves, is contented when our true needs are satisfied. But *amour-propre*, which makes comparisons, is never content and never could be, because this sentiment, preferring ourselves to others, also demands others to prefer us to themselves, which is impossible. (IV: 213-14)[30]

These passages do not merely fail to mention a third kind of self-love. They tell us why no such variant could

---

29. The reader will note that Rousseau attributes virtue to *amour de soi*, rather than to *amour-propre*, in this passage. This in no way contradicts our earlier argument that *amour-propre* helps, and is even required for, the inculcation of virtue. *Amour de soi*, as Rousseau tells us, "is a natural sentiment." Virtue, on the other hand, is a kind of bridle used against inclination. Thus, even if *amour de soi* is the source of virtue insofar as virtue entails a love of order, there is no effective way to transform the natural goodness of *amour de soi* into virtue without the motivational force lent by *amour-propre*.

---

30. That there are only two kinds of self-love is similarly suggested at *Dialogues* I:9.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

exist; they tell us why the group constituted by amour de soi and amour-propre logically excludes any other members. As each of the passages indicates, the difference between the two kinds of self-love centers on the question of absoluteness versus relativity or comparison. An impulse of self-love is either absolute, meaning that one desires one's good without regard to one's standing relative to others, or else it is in some way relative or comparative, meaning that it does entail considerations of one's standing. This is as exhaustive a set of possibilities as the set whose members are "A" and "not-A." An impulse of self-love is either absolute or it is not. It is either amour de soi or it is amour-propre. The latter begins precisely where the former ends, leaving no room for anything else.

If all activity is motivated by passion and all passion is an expression of either amour de soi or amour-propre, then all activity can be attributed either to amour de soi or to amour-propre. But in what proportions? The fourth proposition has to do with the relative force of amour de soi and amour-propre in shaping human affairs. The contest is not close. Amour-propre is the dominant form of self-love in most people. In the disorderly polity of the soul, amour-propre is the ruling council's junior member only in length of service. While passion can arise from either variant of self-love, most passion arises from

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

amour-propre rather than from *amour de soi*. That this is so is easily determined by a process of elimination. Only that passion which is wholesome and benign, which expresses nature's order, derives from *amour de soi*: "*Amour de soi* is always good and always in conformity with order."(*Emile* IV:213) Whatever is not wholesome and benign, whatever does not express nature's order, does not derive from *amour de soi*. Such passion must derive from *amour-propre*. Now it is quite clear that, on Rousseau's reading, most of the passion that animates human beings is *not* wholesome and benign. Most passion, on the contrary, is either competitive to the point of malevolence or based on prejudice, or both. Which means that most passion stems from *amour-propre*. *Amour-propre* is the predominant force or principle informing the passions.

We are now able to draw our conclusion. If *amour-propre* is the chief source of passion, it is very likely the chief source of behavior as well: if all behavior is motivated by passion, and most passion derives from *amour-propre*, then it seems very likely that most behavior is motivated by *amour-propre*.31

Moreover, besides playing the leading role in shaping behavior, *amour-propre* exercises similar influence over character and experience. Not given to systematic presentation of his ideas, Rousseau never offers a precise and formal assessment of the extent of *amour-propre*'s

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

influence on behavior. But being a moralist, he does make several statements regarding the influence of amour-propre on our inner lives. Some of these statements we have already seen, some we have not. If our examination of Rousseau's core psychological propositions has left us with any doubt as to the importance of governing amour-propre, a brief look at some of these statements should lay that doubt to rest.

It is important to notice how categorical Rousseau is in attributing evil to amour-propre. As we just observed, he contends that amour-propre "inspires in men all the harm they do to one another."(SD, 221-22) Similarly, drawing a contrast between the two varieties of self-love, he insists that "the hateful and irascible passions are born of amour-propre."(Emile IV: 214) And we might also recall his

---

31. This reasoning does not quite measure up to the standards of a formal proof. Hence the qualifier in our conclusion: if all action is motivated by passion, and most passion derives from amour-propre, then "it seems very likely" (rather than "we conclude") that most behavior is motivated by amour-propre. We must insert this qualification, this "very likely," since we cannot know for certain that the passion which motivates behavior is representative of passion at large, i.e., we cannot be certain that the passion that is acted upon reflects the same ratio of amour-propre to amour de soi that is found in felt passion, or passion at large: it is conceivable that passion which is acted upon differs somewhat from passion which is felt. This is a rather technical point, however: there is no substantive reason to suppose that there is any significant difference between passion which is acted upon and the total reservoir of felt passion. Thus, although we must qualify our conclusion, we can state it with real confidence. On the basis of the four propositions we reviewed, it does seem very likely that most behavior is motivated by amour-propre.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

attributing to amour-propre "what is worst among men."(SD, 175) (To be sure, he also attributes our virtues to it, but these pale in comparison with our vices; see page 221, above.) There is no equivocation. Although amour-propre is not always bad, all bad comes from amour-propre. Even when amour-propre is not fingered explicitly, its lurking presence is not hard to discern. Consider this example. In a statement as simple and categorical as any other that he makes, Rousseau claims that "All wickedness comes from weakness."(Emile I:67) Amour-propre is not mentioned. But one who knows what "weakness" means to Rousseau -- i.e., that it is an essentially relative thing, measured by the distance between one's desires and one's ability to satisfy those desires[32] -- will immediately recognize amour-propre as the unindicted co-conspirator. For if all wickedness comes from weakness, all weakness, at least weakness of the sort that leads to wickedness, comes from amour-propre. The common effect of all amour-propre, whether well-governed or ill-, is that it opens up oceans of new needs;

32. "When it is said that man is weak, what is meant? This word 'weak' indicates a relation, a relation obtaining within the being to which one applies it. He whose strength surpasses his needs, be he an insect or a worm, is a strong being. He whose needs surpass his strength, be he an elephant or a lion, be he a conqueror or a hero, be he a god, is a weak being. The rebellious angel who misapprehended his nature was weaker than the happy mortal who lives in peace according to his nature. Man is very strong when he is contented with being what he is; he is very weak when he wants to raise himself above humanity." (Emile II:81)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

and the defining effect of ill-governed _amour-propre_ is that these new seas of desire are unnavigable -- either too turbulent, or too vast, or both -- and, thereby, the cause of weakness.

This raises another point of no small significance. In causing weakness, _amour-propre_ produces not only wickedness but also unhappiness. As we discussed in Chapter One, happiness is determined by one's ability to satisfy one's desires.33 When one's desires far outstrip one's capacities, the result is unhappiness. "Our unhappiness consists . . . in the disproportion between our desires and our faculties," Rousseau instructs, and "the road of true happiness" consists "in diminishing the excess of the desires over the faculties and putting power and will in perfect equality."(_Emile_ II:80) The way to diminish the excess of desires is to temper its source, which is _amour-propre_.34 One whose judgement has not been distorted by ill-governed _amour-propre_ will not be consumed by unending desires. "One has pleasure when one wants to have it. It is only opinion that makes everything

---

33. See pages 39-43, above.

---

34. In the passage cited, Rousseau aims his cautionary remarks at imagination rather than at _amour-propre per se_. But imagination, a faculty, is dangerous only because it works with and upon _amour-propre_. Imagination is dangerous because it incites excessive passions, but those passions are manifestations of, and therefore depend wholly upon, _amour-propre_. Thus, in Rousseau's investigation of the causes of unhappiness, _amour-propre_ is implicated every bit as much as imagination.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

difficult and drives happiness away from us"(Emile IV:354) -- and opinion can have this effect only where amour-propre has sunk its poisonous roots. Emile is happy because he is never tyrannized by amour-propre. When amour-propre finally does make its appearance in him, it is regulated and, by being invested in the passion for virtue, is ultimately made to be self-correcting: since passion yields only to stronger passion, a strong passion for virtue is the only reliable means for rooting out whatever new shoots of unwholesome amour-propre might appear.35 And, beyond Emile, there is Jean-Jacques, who recovers "peace of mind and something akin to happiness" by finally subduing amour-propre. The lesson of his case applies to us all: "Whatever our situation, it is only amour-propre that can make us constantly unhappy."(Reveries VIII:130)

For all these reasons, the good governance of amour-propre is the thing most needful. And there is one more reason. Once unwholesome amour-propre has taken root, its effects can probably never be undone. "The sole folly of which one cannot disabuse a man who is not mad is vanity."(Emile IV:245) As with the species, so with the individual: there can be no going back. Mistakes are irreversible. Which makes it all the more imperative that we understand exactly what amour-propre is and how it

35. For discussions of the uses of passion in controlling passion, see Emile IV:327 and V:445.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

arises.

II. WHAT *AMOUR-PROPRE* IS AND HOW IT ARISES

Amour-propre is one of those concepts -- nature is another -- whose centrality to Rousseau's thought is widely understood but whose full meaning is obscure. Few readers would dispute that *amour-propre* is implicated as a major source of evil and that virtually all of Rousseau's ameliorative efforts are aimed at tempering its influence.36 *Amour-propre* would turn up on virtually every attentive reader's list of Rousseau's major concerns. Asked to define *amour-propre*, however, these same readers would find themselves at subtle but significant variance with one another, for there is a common tendency to overlook some important distinctions -- to mistake a part

36. Even those who caution against placing blame on *amour-propre per se* acknowledge that *amour-propre* is the "part" of the soul which houses vice, and that Rousseau's ameliorative efforts are very much aimed at governing it. N.J.H. Dent, for example, argues that it is not *amour-propre per se* but rather inflamed *amour-propre* which is dangerous. (See *Rousseau: An Introduction to his Psychological, Social and Political Theory* (New York: Basil Blackwell, 1988), pp. 4, 52-67 and 70-85; also see the entry for "*amour-propre*" in *A Rousseau Dictionary*, pp. 33-36.) Similarly, Melzer observes, correctly, that it is not *amour-propre per se* but rather personal dependence which Rousseau regards as the true villain. (See *The Natural Goodness of Man*, pp. 70-85.) But neither of these ills, neither inflamed *amour-propre* nor corrupting personal dependence, can exists without *amour-propre*. Hence both Dent and Melzer acknowledge that Rousseau's chief concern, or at least one of his chief concerns, in moral reform is to temper *amour-propre*.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

of *amour-propre* for the whole, or to mistake a common but not universal characteristic for its defining feature.

Our effort in this section will thus be similar to our earlier effort with regard to Rousseau's concept of nature. We shall seek to replace the prevailing partial and approximate interpretations of Rousseau's *amour-propre* with a more comprehensive and precise understanding. There will be one significant difference between the following discussion and the earlier one, however. Whereas the complexity and subtlety of Rousseau's conception of nature is obvious to anyone who has read *Emile* and the *Second Discourse*, the complexity and subtlety of his conception of *amour-propre* is often overlooked. (The complexity of which I am speaking is not the complexity of *amour-propre*'s *development*, which generally *is* appreciated, but rather the complexity of *amour-propre*'s very nature, which generally is not.) Whereas very few readers believe they fully understand Rousseau's concept of nature, a much greater interpretive confidence prevails -- unjustifiably -- regarding *amour-propre*. Thus our task is twofold. Besides arriving at a new and improved interpretation, we must also demonstrate the need for one.

A. Answers and Rebuttals: An Attempt at Dialectic

What is *amour-propre*? It is a kind of self-love.37

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

It is a relative or comparative self-love. It is the successor to *amour de soi*, it is transformed *amour de soi*. This much we know already. We also know that it is inevitable in civilized human beings, that it is aroused by social comparisons, and that it is morally ambiguous. But none of these observations, either individually or collectively, quite adds up to an accurate definition or a full and fair characterization. What is *amour-propre*? It is the self-love of a being whose estimate of his own worth is contingent; it is the self-love of a being whose self-esteem is neither absolute nor assured by nature. Like *amour de soi*, *amour-propre* is the desire for one's own good. The great difference between it and *amour de soi* is simply this: in *amour-propre*, the desire for one's own good necessarily includes the desire to esteem oneself.

Good witness of oneself is one of only three true needs (the other two are strength and health).(Emile II:81) In the savage this need was not problematic. Like the beasts, he had no need to establish his self-worth; he took his worthiness (of preservation and other goods) for granted. In us, however, the need for good witness certainly has become problematic.38 It has been complicated by self-consciousness. And it is this complication that has given birth to *amour-propre*. With self-consciousness human beings acquired the ability -- and with the ability, the need -- to evaluate themselves. Our

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

need for self-worth has come to require that we meet certain standards of worthiness -- or, rather, it has come to require that we _believe_ that we are meeting such standards -- and in so doing it has caused us to pass from savages (and small children) into the interesting, problematic creatures that we are.

Valuation -- more specifically, self-valuation, or the need for self-esteem -- lies at the heart of _amour-propre_. Does Rousseau state the matter thusly? He does not. Rather than identify its abstract, purposive essence, his discussions of _amour-propre_ are more phenomenological; they concentrate on more evident, less abstract matters -- _amour-propre_'s genesis, its potentials, its comparative quality. Rousseau does not offer the sort of philosophical definition or characterization that I am attempting here. Nevertheless, the characterization I am outlining comprehends the many aspects and expressions of Rousseau's _amour-propre_ and is not contradicted by any of them. There are many phenomena which _generally_ appear with _amour-_

---

37. But what is self-love? Sometimes it is described as a passion and sometimes as a principle. In reality, it is both. For more on Rousseau's understanding of "principles of soul" and how it is that self-love can be both a passion and a principle of soul, see Chapter Three, pages 167-69, above.

---

38. The savage could never have understood, for example, Julie's gratitude to Wolmar for giving her "all that which can give me some value in my own eyes."(_NH_, 316) Such a sentiment -- such a concern -- occurs only in civilized human beings.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

propre, or which in some other way are associated with it. But none of those other things truly defines or even perfectly correlates with amour-propre.

Before going any further in elaborating on valuation as the defining feature of amour-propre, let us review some of those other things: let us examine some of the qualities, activities and attitudes which are imperfectly associated with amour-propre but which, being more obvious and more often mentioned by Rousseau, are often mistakenly identified as its defining feature. A catalogue of some of these things will both reveal their insufficiency as defining features and open the way for a fuller appreciation of amour-propre's valuational essence. We begin by making a list; explanations will follow.

(1) Amour-propre is not accurately defined as self-love that is self-conscious or self-reflective. Such self-love may be amour-propre -- in fact it usually is -- but it also may not be: it may be amour de soi.

(2) Amour-propre is not simply defined as the self-love of sociable or civilized men. Amour-propre often brings people into relations with one another, but so does, or at least so can, amour de soi.

(3) Amour-propre is not perfectly synonymous with the desire for others' recognition. In certain instances, amour-propre disregards others' opinions. Moreover, the desire for others' recognition does not always indicate

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

amour-propre: a certain desire for recognition also emanates from _amour de soi_.

(4) _Amour-propre_ is not exactly the same thing as psychological dependence on others. Dependence does normally indicate _amour-propre_, but _amour-propre_ does not always entail dependence.

(5) _Amour-propre_ is not always indicated by the desire to have and to exercise power. That desire, so long as it does not become the desire for dominion over other wills, can derive from _amour de soi_.

(6) _Amour-propre_ is not indicated by every variant of what, in English, we call pride. A child in whom _amour-propre_ has yet to be born can feel pride in his or her skills and accomplishments.

(7) _Amour-propre_ is not always indicated by competitiveness. Competitivenss certainly may signal _amour-propre_, but, depending on the nature of the competition, it does not always do so.

(8) _Amour-propre_ does not always express itself as the desire to see others laid low. It is not always cruel or malicious, though certainly it very often is. And it does not always view the social world in zero-sum terms.

Each of these characterizations hits upon something that is generally, but not perfectly, associated with _amour-propre_. In no case is there an absolute correlation between the characteristic cited and _amour-propre_. In two

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

cases, the cases of psychological dependence and ill will, the cited characteristic always indicates *amour-propre*, but *amour-propre* does not always entail *them*. Two other characteristics, meanwhile -- sociality and self-consciousness -- are always found with *amour-propre* but may also be found with *amour de soi*. And as for the remaining four, their connection to *amour-propre* is even less law-like: the desire for recognition, enjoyment of power, taking pride in self-improvement, competitiveness-- despite their general association with *amour-propre*, none of these is either always present in *amour-propre* or always indicates *amour-propre*. In no case is there a perfect overlap that would allow us to say that one or another of these characteristics is the defining feature, or even *a* defining feature, of *amour-propre*. So says the textual evidence.

Three of the characterizations are rebutted by the example of Jean-Jacques. The Jean-Jacques of the *Dialogues* and the *Reveries*[39] is a man largely free of *amour-propre*. Says the generally reliable "Rousseau" of the *Dialogues*, "The man who is not dominated by *amour-propre* and who does not go seeking his happiness far from himself is the only one who knows heedlessness and sweet leisure, and J[ean]-

39. We shall refer to the Jean-Jacques of the *Dialogues* and the author of the *Reveries* as one and the same person. There are some differences between the two characters, but the differences are negligible, at least with regard to the matter at hand.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

J[acques] is that man as far as I can determine."(II:144) Amour-propre does maintain a kind of shadowy presence in Jean-Jacques' soul, but for the most part it remains dormant: it is awakened only by rare circumstances and does not stay awake for long.40 Thus, absent any evidence to the contrary, we are entitled to assume that the dominant elements of Jean-Jacques' character are manifestations of amour de soi rather than amour-propre -- even if these elements are generally associated with amour-propre.

Jean-Jacques is reflective and self-conscious; he is sociable; and he even desires others' recognition -- thus establishing that none of these traits is exclusive to amour-propre or its defining feature.

(1) That he is reflective about himself is apparent on every page of the Dialogues and Reveries. Indeed, the Reveries are nothing but an exercise in self-reflection: the author describes and comments upon his character and his experience; he examines who he is and how he relates to the world around him. And although Jean-Jacques never makes a direct appearance in the Dialogues, what emerges from the lips of "Rousseau" and "the Frenchman" is a portrait of a man who is so penetrating on the subject of himself that he has been able to ascertain important facts about the essence of human nature (e.g. its inner goodness)

---

40. For a more detailed discussion of Jean-Jacques' amour-propre see pages 329-30 and notes 93-95, below.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

from his self-study. Jean-Jacques lacks amour-propre, yet is as self-conscious and reflective a man as has ever lived -- from which we conclude that while self-consciousness may generally be associated with amour-propre, it is not its defining feature.41

(2) Jean-Jacques' sociability is only slightly less apparent than his self-reflectiveness. Though not mentioned on every page, it is mentioned frequently, and memorably. We hear repeatedly of his longing for "the sweetness of true society."(Dialogues III:225)42 That this longing goes unfulfilled only clinches the point: rather than resign himself to an asocial life, he takes to populating his world through imagination. When his enemies, through their slander and scheming, deprive him of the opportunity for true friendship, he uses his extraordinary imagination to compensate himself. And he does so with great effectiveness:

> If you were told that a mortal, in other respects most unfortunate, regularly spent five or six hours a day in delightful company, composed of men who are just, true, gay, likeable, simple but very enlightened, gentle with great virtues; of charming

---

41. That self-consciousness and reflection can occur without amour-propre is also demonstrated by the denizens of Rousseau's "monde ideal."(See Dialogues I:9-12) Like Jean-Jacques, they are deeply conscious of and thoughtful about themselves but are free of the disposition to compare themselves with others -- free, that is, of amour-propre. As Starobinski describes their condition, "consciousness ceases to be separate from the world . . . yet the self is certain that it exists." (Transparency and Obstacle, p. .)

---

42. Also see Dialogues II:118 and 165.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

> and wise women, full of feeling and graces, modest without shame, droll without giddiness, using the ascendancy of their sex and the empire of their charms only to nurture among men the emulation of great things and zeal for virtue; that this mortal being known, esteemed, and cherished in these elite societies lived with everything composing them in an intercourse of confidence, attachment, and familiarity; that he found there his choice of true friends, faithful mistresses, tender and solid female friends who are perhaps more valuable still: don't you think that the half of each day spent in this manner would easily outweigh the hardships of the other half? . . . Well, Sir, that is J[ean]-J[acque's] state in the midst of his afflictions and his fictions. (<u>Dialogues</u> II:119)43

So strong is Jean-Jacques' need for love and friendship that he "socializes" his solitude -- and so powerful is his imagination that he achieves happiness in doing so. Jean-Jacques lacks <u>amour-propre</u>, yet is "[t]he most sociable and loving of men" (<u>Reveries</u> I:27) -- from which we conclude that while sociability is indeed associated with <u>amour-propre</u>, it is not its defining feature.

(3) If there is a single quality that one tends to equate with <u>amour-propre</u>, it is the desire for others' esteem. Undoubtedly the most commonly endorsed of the characterizations listed above is the characterization of <u>amour-propre</u> as the desire for recognition. Yet the simple fact of the matter is that Jean-Jacques, in whom <u>amour-propre</u> barely breathes, has this desire. In the passage just quoted, we are told that part of his happiness comes

---

43. Further autobiographical descriptions of the uses of imagination appear at <u>Reveries</u> III:28 and <u>Confessions</u> I:37. For an elaboration on this theme see Schwartz, pp. 98-102.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

from his being "known, esteemed, and cherished in these elite societies." In an even more striking passage from the same work, "Rousseau" reports from first-hand knowledge that Jean-Jacques has expressed this desire, and expressed it insistently:

> He told me a hundred times that he would have been consoled about the public injustice if he had found a single human heart that opened up to his, felt his sorrows, and pitied them. The frank and full esteem of one single person would have compensated him for the scorn of all the others. (_Dialogues_ III:225)

If Rousseau is consistent in his autobiographical works, if Jean-Jacques truly is without much _amour-propre_, then we must conclude that not even the desire for others' esteem is a perfect indicator, let alone the essence, of _amour-propre_.

When is the desire for recognition not an indicator of _amour-propre_? The answer has to do with the larger purpose of the desire. If a person craves others' esteem in order to enhance or safeguard his self-esteem, then his desire is indeed born of _amour-propre_.44 If he desires their esteem for some other reason, however -- if he wants it for its own sake, for the sake of nonegoistic pleasure or commiseration -- then it is apt to be an expression of _amour de soi_ rather than _amour-propre_. Doubtless most instances of the desire for recognition are instances of _amour-propre_. One way to know this is to consider what is at stake in most cases. When one's feelings are at stake -- when the failure to gain desired recognition results in

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

anger or shame, or, conversely, when gaining recognition brings about pride -- we may be certain that the desire is an expression of *amour-propre*. Anger, shame and pride are emotions that are felt only where the demands of self-esteem have made themselves felt. Anger is aroused when one is denied desired respect. Faced with such denial, the person with strong self-esteem will feel contemptuous indignation, while the person with weaker self-esteem (for example, a vain or insecure person) is apt to feel resentment. But whatever the specific variety, anger is provoked only when one's self-love is offended by the denial of respect. As for shame and pride, their relation to self-valuation or self-esteem is even more intimate.

---

44. Why should one's self-esteem depend upon others' esteem? Rousseau does not say. (Since the question goes to the purposes behind our being constituted as we are, it may be that Rousseau sees the question as lying beyond the scope of science and hence beyond his capability to answer. For further discussion of Rousseau's unwillingness to speculate on such matters, see pages 301-04, below.) But if Rousseau does not answer the question, others do -- most notably, Hegel and his interpreter, Alexandre Kojève. Hegel's answer has to do with the subjective nature of self-esteem. Without others' express recognition, one is apt to lack "subjective certainty" of one's human worth or dignity. The point is made in more ordinary language by Francis Fukuyama: "It is possible for one to feel thymotic pride in oneself without demanding recognition. But esteem is not a 'thing' like an apple or a Porsche: it is a state of consciousness, and to have sujective certainty about one's own sense of worth, it must be recognized by another consciousness." (*The End of History and the Last Man* (New York: Avon Books, 1992), pp. 165-66.) For the full argument, which is as much epistemological and metaphysical as psychological, see Hegel's *Phenomenology of Spirit*, trans. A.V. Miller (New York: Oxford University Press, 1977), pp. 104-19, and Kojève, *Introduction to the Reading of Hegel* (New York: Basic Books, 1969), pp. 4-11.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Or, rather, it is more than intimate, it is a relation of identity: shame _is_ the loss of self-esteem that we suffer when we fail to live up to our sense of self-worth, and pride _is_ the enhancement of self-esteem that we gain from real achievement or recognition of real achievement.[45]

When Jean-Jacques is denied the recognition he desires, he suffers sadness and a sense of loss. But he does not become angry, nor does he feel shame. What is at stake for him is joy and sadness, not self-esteem or its lack. His desire for recognition arises from a source other than _amour-propre_ and so proves that the characterization of _amour-propre_ as the desire for recognition is not accurate.

There is also another reason not to consider _amour-propre_ synonymous with the desire for others' recognition, a reason exemplified not by Jean-Jacques but by the outstanding citizen, his counterpart across the nature-citizenship divide. Virtuous citizens, as we have seen, are very much creatures of _amour-propre_. The outstandingly virtuous citizen, a Cato, is no exception to this rule. But precisely because he is so virtuous, and especially if those around him no longer are virtuous at all, as was the case with Cato, he will not care much for their recognition. Peerless, he sees no one whose respect could much matter to him; indeed, he sees many whose respect he

---

45. See Fukuyama, pp. xvi-xvii and 164-65.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

surely would disdain. Such a person is too proud, has too noble an _amour-propre_, to seek recognition from his own society. Perhaps he acts with an eye toward future, morally revitalized generations. Or perhaps he has in mind the virtuous figures of generations past, or perhaps the gods. But even if he does act with some such audience in mind, he certainly does not act for the sake of any applause that he will hear. His immediate focus is on worthiness as such, on an objective, impersonal standard, rather than on any audience that he can see. As a person with great _amour-propre_, he certainly is intent on safeguarding his self-respect. But precisely because his _amour-propre_ _is_ so great, so noble, its gaze is perforce directed away from those around him to the interior realm of his own high standards. Thus he, like Jean-Jacques, illustrates the inaccuracy of simply equating _amour-propre_ and the desire to be recognized by one's fellows.

(4) The same reasoning that refutes the characterization of _amour-propre_ as the desire for recognition also invalidates the characterization of _amour-propre_ as psychological dependency. Cato's commitment to unrewarded virtue at the expense of recognition proves that he was not dependent on others (or, at the very least, that any dependence he did have was outweighed by his greater attachment to virtue). The _amour-propre_ of the truly exemplary citizen transcends psychological dependence on

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

his fellow citizens. Doubtless even Cato began life dependent on others' approval and support.[46] And even at the peak of his virtue Cato would have continued to see and judge himself from outside, from the perspective of others' eyes, as it were, just as the psychologically dependent person does. But whereas the psychologically dependent person judges himself from the perspective of other people's opinion, the exemplary citizen judges himself from the perspective of the nation's true needs. As a citizen, Cato was in a very definite sense "other-directed." But his "other" was the good of the nation, not the judgment of other citizens -- which is why he sounds to us so much like the model of "inner-directed" integrity.[47]

In the Second Discourse Rousseau seems to say that all social men are psychologically dependent on others. "[T]he social man," he says, "always outside of himself, knows how to live only in the opinion of others; and it is, so to speak, from their judgment alone that he draws the sentiment of his own existence."(179) But the Second

---

46. A technical clarification: In Rousseau's view the psychological need for support and approval appears not at birth but rather with the onset of self-consciousness and amour-propre. In most people this occurs soon after birth. But it need not occur until many years have passed. The pre-adolescent Emile exhibits no need or desire for others' support or approval. His dependence on others would seem to be strictly physical.

---

47. The terms "other-directed" and "inner-directed" were popularized by David Riesman. See The Lonely Crowd (New Haven: Yale University Press, 1950).

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Discourse is about savages and their corrupt descendents; it is not about citizens -- and it is certainly not about exceptional citizens like Cato. The description does not apply, and is not meant to apply, to one such as Cato. The description does fit the exemplary citizen in part: he does exist outside of himself, in the sense that he still looks at himself and judges himself from the perspective of the city. But it fits him only in part, for he surely does not "live only in the opinion of others."

Thus far three of the characterizations have been rebutted by Jean-Jacques, and a fourth by the outstanding citizen. The remaining four are easily dispatched by the example of Emile.

(5) One of the most reliable indications of amour-propre, and without a doubt its most unfortunate expression, is the desire for power. Yet Emile exhibits a taste for power or mastery long before he shows the first hint of amour-propre. Speaking with reference to a young Emile in whom the birth of amour-propre is still years away, Rousseau notes that "It belongs to every age, especially his, to want to create, imitate, produce, give signs of power and activity."(II:98; emphasis added) (Even the toddler seeks to project his power into the surrounding world: "he senses in himself, so to speak, enough life to animate everything surrounding him. That he do or undo is

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

a matter of no importance; it suffices that he change the condition of things . . ."(I:67)) Clearly it is inaccurate to attribute all variants of the taste for power or mastery to _amour-propre_. The young Emile's joyful mastery of tasks and even of nature -- the context of Rousseau's observation is the story of Emile's first attempt at gardening -- derives from _amour de soi_.

There are of course some variants of the taste for power that always do indicate _amour-propre_. Every desire for dominion over other people comes from _amour-propre_. Still, it would be inaccurate to see the desire for dominion, or any other variant of the desire for power, as the defining feature of _amour-propre_. For even after he does develop _amour-propre_, Emile never exhibits the least desire to command anyone but his wife (and he obeys her as much as he commands her).

(6) All expressions of _amour-propre_ can be classified as either pride or vanity.48 But not everything that we call pride (in English) is an expression of _amour-propre_. Although the noun "_orgueil_" (the principal French equivalent of "pride") does not appear in connection with the pre-adolescent Emile, the verb "_se piquer_" (appropriately translated as "to pride oneself") does appear. Speaking for Emile and himself, the tutor states that "_we pride ourselves_ not on knowing the truth of things

---

48. See pages 307-08, below.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

but only on not falling into error."(III:206; emphasis added) 49 The young Emile does not feel the kind of pride that is based on comparisons with others. His is not the pride of superiority. Still, at least according to contemporary English usage, his experience does include some kind of pride, and so invalidates the notion that all pride is a species of amour-propre.

(7) The same thing that is true of amour-propre's relation to pride is also true of its relation to competitiveness: Just as the experience of pride does not always derive from amour-propre, so too competitiveness, the desire not just to be good but to be better, does not always indicate amour-propre. Competitiveness relative to other people surely does indicate amour-propre, but competitiveness oriented toward oneself, competitiveness oriented toward outstripping one's own previous achievements, does not. Thus, even as Rousseau warns against inculcating the one, he endorses the other:

> let there never be any comparisons with other children, no rivals, no competitors, not even in running, once he has begun to be able to reason. I prefer a hundred times over that he not learn what he would only learn out of jealousy or vanity. However, every year I shall note the progress he has made; I shall compare it to that which he will make the following year. I shall tell him, "You have grown so many inches. That is the ditch you jumped over, the load you carried, the distance you threw a pebble, the course you ran before getting winded, etc. Let us now see what you will do." Thus I arouse him without

---

49. Untranslated: "nous ne nous piquons ni lui ni moi de savoir la verite des choses, mais seulement de ne pas donner dans l'erreur."(OC)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

> making him jealous of anyone. He will want to outdo himself. He ought to. I see no problem in his being his own competitor.(III:184)

Competitiveness, like pride and like the desire for mastery, does not derive from _amour-propre_ and need not be feared -- as long as its focus is something besides other people. Competitiveness, like those other two, is a relative or comparative sentiment. There is no competition without an other, the competitor. But what counts is not comparativeness per se but rather the nature -- which is to say, the object -- of the comparison. As the child becomes a youth, as he develops reason, he will begin to make comparisons: comparison is what reasoning is all about. The trick -- the way to make those comparisons serve his development and keep from awakening _amour-propre_ -- is to ensure that the referents of his relative evaluations are not other people.

What about competitiveness that _is_ oriented toward other people? Can we not define _amour-propre_ as the desire to be better than other people, as the desire for first place among men? Certainly many commentators have endorsed just this definition. They have interpreted Rousseau's describing _amour-propre_ as "a relative sentiment"(_SD_, 220, n.o) to mean that _amour-propre_ cares only about one's standing relative to other people.50 But as generally true as this definition might be, it is not perfectly true. _Amour-propre_ always does want preeminence, but in its

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

"larger" varieties it wants more than preeminence. A person with great pride, or even a person with moderate pride but with great skill, will want not only to be best but to be great or excellent. A Cato will not be content to be the most virtuous citizen: surrounded by corrupt compatriots, he will be satisfied only by meeting a higher and more objective standard of moral excellence. Similarly, an artist or craftsman who is unrivaled by his fellows will likely continue to prod himself to greater achievement, not in order to be the best -- he is already the best -- but to be even more excellent by an objective, suprasocial standard. Thus, while *amour-propre* may begin as the desire for preeminence -- and while for most of us it may never go beyond this -- for some, at least, it does go to farther reaches.

(8) If the example of the pre-adolescent Emile refutes the simplistic identification of *amour-propre* with competitiveness, pride, and the desire for mastery, the example of the older Emile, an Emile *with* *amour-propre*, refutes the characterization of *amour-propre* as universally ill-intentioned toward others.51 The birth of *amour-propre* effects many changes in Emile. Many new passions take shape in his soul. But ill will is not one of them. His sense of honor is not prickly or pugnacious: it requires only that others not mistreat him with impunity.52 His pride (and we are now talking about "*orgeuil*", not just "*se*

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

piquer") is based on his virtue and achievements rather than on his superior natural authority and attractiveness.53 He envies no one and needs to defeat no one. And the one conquest he does attempt is both successful and bloodless.54 Emile, in short, exemplifies the ideal upheld by most contemporary moral and psychological thought; he is the goal of all but the most marginal of our psychotherapies. He is not without amour-propre, but he *is* without the zero-sum mentality,

---

50. John Charvet, for example, defines Rousseau's amour-propre as "a relative [self-love], relative in the sense that one's well-being for oneself in this self-love depends . . . on the observations and comparisons that one makes of others in relation to oneself." See The Social Problem in Rousseau's Philosophy (London: Cambridge University Press, 1974), p. 69. Also see Horowitz, p. 93.

---

51. The idea that amour-propre always entails ill intentions might seem to be refuted by the example of the virtuous citizen as well. But not even the most exemplary citizen is unproblematic in this regard: his virtue ensures that he will be well disposed to his fellow citizens, but it does not ensure that his stance toward members of other communities will be as beneficent. At the very least, the patriotic citizen is apt to be suspicious of outsiders. One need only recall the actual histories of Sparta and the Roman Republic. Home to the type of citizen Rousseau admires, they were far from peaceful toward their neighbors. (Consider, too, Socrates' comparison of ideal guardians to "noble dogs," who are "as gentle as can be with their familiars and people they know and the opposite with those they don't know." See Republic 375d.)

---

52. See IV:250.

---

53. Emile's superiority is palpable to other men, even if it means little to him. By virtue of this superiority, Rousseau tells us, Emile could easily ascend to political authority if he wanted to. See IV:335.

---

54. The reference of course is to Sophie, who, though conquered, also governs him.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

alternately offensive and defensive, which characterizes those whose *amour-propre* has been less well educated than his. The example of Emile thus disproves the characterization of *amour-propre* as universally ill-intentioned toward others. Ill will, to be sure, is common in *amour-propre*. But as it is not universal, it is no more a defining feature of *amour-propre* than any of the others we have reviewed.

Here, perhaps, if anywhere, the skeptical reader will object. Does not Rousseau maintain in the most unambiguous terms that *amour-propre* is by its very nature rivalrous and discontented? In fact he does. *Amour-propre* *is* always rivalrous: "Remember that as soon as *amour-propre* has developed, the relative 'I' is constantly in play, and the young man never observes others without returning to himself and comparing himself with them."(*Emile* IV:243) And it is always discontented:

> *Amour-propre*, which makes comparisons, is never content and never could be, because this sentiment, preferring ourselves to others, also demands others to prefer us to themselves, which is impossible. This is how the gentle and affectionate passions are born of *amour de soi*, and how the hateful and irascible passions are born of *amour-propre*.(*Emile* IV:213-14)

There is no getting around the categorical nature of these statements. Once *amour-propre* appears, the young man "*never*" ceases to compare himself competitively with others. And although *amour-propre* can be the source of much that is admirable in human beings, "it is *never*

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

content, and never could be." Even in Emile _amour-propre_ is rivalrous and discontented.

Nevertheless, rivalrousness and discontent do not necessarily imply ill intentions toward others. The rivalrousness and discontent of Emile's _amour-propre_ is the rivalrousness and discontent of the superior competitor. Like the runner who is leading the race and who knows that the other runners will not catch up to him, Emile compares himself to others but is sufficiently pleased with his relative position not to wish them any harm. Rivalrousness, in his case, means only that he continues to compare himself to others. And discontent, in his case, means only that his self-esteem is not absolute and without requirements, but rather contingent upon his acting in such a way as to sustain his own good witness. This is worlds away from the gnawing discontent of one who is, or who feels himself to be, trailing in life's race.55 Emile would not wish to trade places with anyone; he feels himself -- with justice -- to be ahead of the game.

---

55. Those who lack Emile's satisfaction with their place in the scheme of things often find themselves unable to enjoy even the things they have. _Amour-propre_ "is irritated by the advantages someone else has over us, without being appeased by those for which it feels compensated. The feeling of inferiority in a single respect therefore poisons the feeling of superiority in a thousand others, and what one has more of is forgotten in devoting attention only to what one has less of."(_Dialogues_ II:113) For an interesting discussion of the inevitable dissatisfaction of those who are afflicted by such sensitive _amour-propre_, see Anthony Skillen, "Rousseau and the Fall of Social Man," _Philosophy_ 60, 1985, pp. 105-21.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Recognizing that the celebrated are apt to be the most dependent and therefore the most miserable of men, and that the lives of "the great" amount to little more than the anxious pursuit of vain triumphs, he feels no inclination to prefer their lot to his own. (IV:242-43)56 He has no reason to envy anyone, and he knows that he has no reason to envy anyone. And so his amour-propre, far from malevolent or resentful, is benign to the point of beneficence. Everything depends on Emile's being able to compare himself favorably to other people from the very first:

> Since my Emile has until now looked only at himself, the first glance he casts on his fellows leads him to compare himself with them. And the first sentiment aroused in him by this comparison is the desire to be in the first position. This is the point where amour de soi turns into amour-propre and where begin to arise all the passions which depend on this one. But to decide whether among these passions the dominant ones in his character will be humane and gentle or cruel and malignant, whether they will be

56. "Surely, if he judges them well, he will not want to be in the place of any of them; for since the goal of all the torments they give themselves is founded on prejudices he does not have, it appears to him to be pie in the sky. For him, all that he desires is within his reach. Sufficient unto himself and free of prejudices, on whom will he be dependent? He has arms, health, moderation, few needs, and the means of satisfying them. Nurtured in the most absolute liberty, he conceives of no ill greater than servitude. He pities these miserable kings, slaves of all that obey them. He pities these false wise men, chained to their vain reputations. He pities these rich fools, martyrs to their display. He pities these conspicuous voluptuaries, who devote their entire lives to boredom in order to appear to have pleasure. He would pity even the enemy who would do him harm, for he would see his misery in his wickedness. He would say to himself, 'In giving himself the need to hurt me, this man has made his fate dependent on mine.'"(IV:244)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

passions of beneficence and commiseration or of envy and covetousness, we must know what position he will feel he has among men, and what kinds of obstacles he may believe he has to overcome to reach the position he wants to occupy.(IV:235)

Because Emile is pleased with his relative standing, his *amour-propre* becomes the source of "humane and gentle" passions rather than "cruel and malignant" ones. As the reference to "beneficence and commiseration" indicates, his *amour-propre* forms an alliance with his natural sympathy by making him feel good about himself as one who cares for others: He pities those who suffer not just because it is natural and so feels good in its own right, but also because, in pitying and in rendering assistance to the suffering, he confirms his good opinion of himself.57

This alliance in Emile's soul between *amour-propre* and natural pity points to the deeper, more philosophic reason for the benignity of his *amour-propre*. To say that there is an alliance between Emile's *amour-propre* and natural pity is to say that there is an alliance between his *amour-propre* and *amour de soi*, since pity is an expression of *amour de soi*. Or, to put it a little differently, it is to say that there is an alliance in him between *amour-propre*,

---

57. See Bloom, "Introduction," pp. 17-20 for an enlightening discussion of the way Rousseau enlists *amour-propre* into the service of pity. As Melzer neatly formulates it, "*amour-propre* is not inflamed by envy but rather soothed by -- and even channeled into -- *pity* for the misfortunes of others. Through this proud and generous compassion, Emile is inspired with a love for other men and with a distaste for the attempt to use them." See *The Natural Goodness of Man*, p. 93; emphasis in the original.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

the characteristic that most represents and accounts for man's departure from nature, and nature itself. The unnatural in him is in sync with the natural; the discontinuity between nature and human nature is overcome.

The birth of _amour-propre_ marks the end of original naturalness, but _amour-propre_'s alliance with _amour de soi_ achieves another kind of naturalness. The alliance between the two is precisely what constitutes civilized naturalness. In our earlier discussion, we defined Emile's naturalness, the naturalness of "the natural man living in the state of society," in largely quantitative terms: the natural man, we said, is one in whom there is still much _amour de soi_, one in whom _amour-propre_ has not supplanted too much of the original, nonrelative self-love.58 But civilized naturalness is more than just a quantitative matter. Indeed, the quantitative fact -- the survival of a high degree of _amour de soi_ -- is made possible only by a qualitative fact: it is made possible only by an _amour-propre_ which is beneficent. And that beneficence comes from Emile's correct belief that no one's position in life is more enviable than his. The good governance of _amour-propre_ as exemplified by Emile's education is thus less a matter of limiting its extent than of shaping its character. It is only because he feels himself so fortunate, only because he feels so much like a winner,

58. See Chapter Two, pages 106-12, above.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

that Emile is able to forget about the race, about winning and losing, as much as he does. It is only because his *amour-propre* is soothed by his self-assessment that he is able to avoid worrying about self-assessment and to dwell instead in the sweet ease of *amour de soi*.59

Such are some of the more common mischaracterizations of Rousseau's *amour-propre*. That they are more often implicit than explicit does not make them any the less needful of correction. Perhaps it makes the task of correction *more* imperative: nothing is more potentially

---

59. There is a passage in the *Dialogues* which would seem to contradict my claim that *amour-propre* is not always ill-intentioned toward others. According to the "Rousseau" character, *amour-propre* "demands preferences, whose enjoyment is purely negative, and it no longer seeks satisfaction in our own benefit but solely in the harm of another."(I:9) I would submit, however, that we are entitled to disregard this passage as an overstatement for the following reasons. First, *amour-propre* is explicitly referred to here as a feeling, as opposed to a principle, which may mean that the subject of the remark is *amour-propre* in its narrow, conventional sense, i.e., vanity. Second, the passage is contradicted by the passage already quoted from *Emile*, in which Rousseau admits that *amour-propre* can in fact be the source of "humane and gentle" passions.(IV:235) And, third, whereas the passage from *Emile* comes to us directly from the pen of Rousseau the author, which is to say from the real Rousseau, the lines from the *Dialogues* come from the lips of "Rousseau" the character, a less reliable source. (The unreliability of the characters' presentation of the author's views is suggested at *Dialogues* I:69-70.) Other scholars have replied differently to Rousseau's inconsistency on *amour-propre*'s moral quality. J.I. MacAdam, for example, argues that the inconsistency between the different portraits of *amour-propre* constitutes an unresolved contradiction, and one that detracts from the coherence of Rousseau's work. See "The *Discourse on Inequality* and the *Social Contract*," *Philosophy* 50, 1975, p. 17.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

damaging to an edifice, after all, whether architectural or interpretive, than hidden structural flaws. But pointing out some common errors has obviously not been the sole purpose, or even the main purpose, of the foregoing review. We have examined these characterizations not so much because they are somehow wrong but because they are also somehow right. Each, as we have seen, fastens upon some characteristic or phenomenon that is generally associated with *amour-propre*. In so doing, each illuminates some of the practicalities of *amour-propre*. And even if they fail to isolate *amour-propre*'s essence, they still have shed considerable light on it: for, in (meta)psychological matters such as these, it is only by wading through the practicalities of a thing that one ultimately reaches its essence.

That essence, to repeat, is valuational. *Amour-propre* is the source of all feeling and behavior that concern the individual's need to establish, maintain, or confirm his sense of self-worth -- in today's popular language, his self-esteem. The existence of *amour-propre* is perfectly coextensive with the problem of self-esteem. *Amour-propre* exists only (a) when, (b) to the extent that, and (c) for as long as, self-esteem is problematic or contingent.

(a) *Amour-propre* is born only when, in consequence of incipient self-consciousness, self-esteem ceases to be absolute and unconscious and becomes instead problematic.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

The infant, like the savage, is free of _amour-propre_. Having no meaningful self-consciousness, no awareness of his moral relations with others, his sense of self-worth is not problematic; and so in him there is only _amour de soi_.

(b) Once it has been born, _amour-propre_ exists only to the _extent_ that self-esteem has become problematic. That is to say, the extent of _amour-propre_'s "takeover" of the soul, the extent to which it supplants _amour de soi_, depends upon just how problematic self-esteem has become. In most people the takeover is total, or very nearly so. But it need not be. As the case of Emile illustrates, the birth of _amour-propre_ need not mark a complete break with all that went before: a good deal of _amour de soi_ can survive and coexist with _amour-propre_. As we noted above, the extent to which _amour-propre_ gains hold of the soul is determined by the specific quality of the _amour-propre_ concerned. Whereas some kinds of _amour-propre_ inevitably become all-consuming (one thinks of the vanity of Jean-Jacques' enemies[60]), other kinds (the pride of an Emile or a Sophie, for example) are less aggressive in their appetite to rule the soul. Thus any hope of limiting _amour-propre_'s scope -- and thereby achieving civilized naturalness à la Emile -- depends on our inculcating the

---

60. The outstanding characteristic of Jean-Jacques' enemies is their all-consuming vanity, vanity which reveals itself in their obsession with him. See, for example, _Dialogues_ II:154-55.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

right kind of *amour-propre*, or what one may be forgiven for calling the good kind of bad self-love.

(c) Finally, *amour-propre* *persists* only for as long as self-esteem *remains* problematic. If a person should somehow free himself of the need to earn or safeguard his sense of self-worth -- and presumably this would require a transcendence of ordinary self-consciousness, since it was the advent of self-consciousness that made self-esteem problematic in the first place -- then he would have achieved freedom from *amour-propre*. Such, in fact, is the condition of Jean Jacques, at least at his best.

In all these respects -- in its birth, in its character and extent, and in its persistence -- *amour-propre* reflects the problem of self-valuation. Let us address each of these points in turn.

B. The Birth of *Amour-propre*

Following Rousseau, we have spoken of the "birth" of *amour-propre*, and of its being "aroused" or "awakened." But it is important not to lose sight of another, perhaps more descriptive terminology. When he is not merely referring to the event but is actually describing it, Rousseau speaks of the appearance of *amour-propre* as a transformation: "This is the point where *amour de soi* *turns into* *amour-propre* . . ."(Emile IV:235); "that is how *amour*

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

de soi, which is a good and absolute feeling, *becomes amour-propre* . . ."(*Dialogues* I:9) What occurs is not an acquisition so much as a conversion.

What brings about this conversion? Rousseau offers several accounts -- one in the *Second Discourse*, one in the *Dialogues*, and two in *Emile*. These accounts are not entirely consistent with one another, though they are not irreconcilable either, as we shall see. Each, however, shares a central element. In each account of the transformation of *amour de soi* into *amour-propre*, which of course is a passionate or sentimental transformation, what drives the process is cognitive development. The process begins when circumstances conspire to stimulate and refine the rational faculty, which is really nothing more than the ability to perceive and consider relations of various sorts.61 Once launched, cognitive development continues apace until, eventually, self-consciousness is attained, i.e. the awareness that one is a separate self related to others and that those others have desires and wills of their own. Whereupon the decisive change, no longer merely cognitive, takes place: as one gains awareness of being a separate self related to other selves, needs which had been

---

61. Although Rousseau gives no single definitive characterization of reason, what he seems to mean by it is the capacity to compare, analyze and draw inferences -- i.e., to consider relations between things. That is why he is able to ascribe a certain (albeit minimal) rational capacity to children and even to animals.(*Emile* II:108; *SD*, 114)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

simple and absolute become complicated and relative. Most significantly, the need for good witness of oneself, originally a largely unconscious and easily satisfied need, gets socialized and relativized. Good witness of oneself, the only one of man's three "true" or natural needs that is cognitive, inevitably is transformed by cognitive development. One's sense of self-worth comes to depend upon what others think and upon one's place vis-à-vis those others. At which point *amour-propre* has been born. *Amour-propre* is made possible -- and inevitable -- only by cognitive development, by the attainment of knowledge of one's separateness and relatedness.

This is certainly the case in the account offered in the *Second Discourse*. There, Rousseau provides an historic narration which admittedly is somewhat speculative but whose major elements he affirms with confidence.62 What initiates the process of man's great inner transformation is something utterly circumstantial and without moral content: Natural phenomena such as "great floods or earthquakes" and the breaking up of "portions of the continent into islands" "forced [men] to live together."(148) What was physical and hence submoral in itself is anything but submoral in its ultimate effects,

---

62. Marc Plattner demonstrates the considerable extent to which Rousseau believes in the historic reality of the tale he tells in the *Second Discourse*. See *Rousseau's State of Nature*, pp. 17-25.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

however. The connection between the physical and the moral? The cognitive.

> Men who until this time wandered in the woods, having adopted a more fixed settlement, slowly come together, unite into different bands, and finally form in each country a particular nation, unified by customs and character, not by regulations and laws but by the same kind of life and foods and by the common influence of climate. A permanent proximity cannot fail to engender at length some contact between different families. Young people of different sexes live in neighboring huts; the passing intercourse demanded by nature soon leads to another kind no less sweet and more permanent through mutual frequentation. People grow accustomed to consider different objects and to make comparisons; imperceptibly they acquire ideas of merit and beauty which produce sentiments of preference.(148)

What has occurred thus far? Accidental circumstances (being forced to live in close proximity to one another) have prompted cognitive change: men have acquired the ability to make comparisons as well as standards (ideas of merit and beauty) by which to make those comparisons. Only now, in consequence of these cognitive steps, does the first sentimental change take place: their "ideas of merit and beauty . . . produce sentiments of preference."

From this point the process gathers steam. Everything changes, and changes quickly. But even now the process of sentimental development, the development that will culminate in the birth of amour-propre, proceeds only as far and as fast as cognitive development allows:

> In proportion as ideas and sentiments follow upon one another and as mind and heart are trained, the human race continues to be tamed, contacts spread, and bonds are tightened. People grew accustomed to assembling in front of the huts or around a large

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

> tree; song and dance, true children of love and leisure, became the amusement or rather the occupation of idle and assembled men and women. Each one began to look at the others and to want to be looked at himself, and public esteem had a value. The one who sang or danced the best, the handsomest, the strongest, the most adroit, or the most eloquent became the most highly considered; and that was the first step toward inequality and, at the same time, toward vice. From these first preferences were born on one hand vanity and contempt, on the other shame and envy; and the fermentation caused by these new leavens eventually produced compounds fatal to happiness and innocence. (149)

The continued enhancement of man's cognitive capacity brings about the full flowering of amour-propre. The plant has not yet become a wild, choking vine -- vanity and contempt, shame and envy are as yet nascent and thus only slightly noxious -- but it has taken firm and virtually inextractable root. The great moral and sentimental transformation of the species, the true launching of human history, has been brought about by the expansion of man's cognitive horizons.

Such is Rousseau's account of the genesis of amour-propre in the species.63 The accounts given in the Dialogues and in Emile address the genesis of amour-propre in the individual. The account that appears in the Dialogues comes from the mouth of the "Rousseau" character, but it accords with -- indeed, it succinctly summarizes -- views elsewhere expressed by his namesake. Like the story

---

63. A technical point: The foregoing account is of vanity's genesis. Pride had already made its first appearance a little earlier. See SD, 144.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

told in the _Second Discourse_, it emphasizes the cognitive source of _amour-propre_'s awakening.

> If you ask me the origin of this disposition to compare oneself, which changes a natural and good passion into another passion that is artificial and bad, I will answer that it comes from social relations, from the progress of ideas, and from the cultivation of the mind. So long as we are occupied solely by absolute needs, we confine ourselves to seeking what is truly useful to us, we scarcely cast an idle glance at others. But as society becomes more closely knit by the bond of mutual needs, as the mind is extended, exercised, and enlightened, it becomes more active, embraces more objects, grasps more relationships, examines, compares. In these frequent comparisons, it doesn't forget either itself, its fellows, or the place it aspires to among them. (II:113)

It is impossible to miss the centrality of the cognitive in this account. Circumstance, in the form of social intercourse, surely plays a role. But its role, as in the _Second Discourse_, is to stimulate cognitive development -- "the progress of ideas," "the cultivation of the mind." And it is this progress, which consists in the comprehension of more and more relationships, that brings about the inclination to compare self to others, the inclination which signals the arousal of _amour-propre_.

The reader may have noticed an apparent contradiction. Earlier, we made a point of dissociating ill will from the core of _amour-propre_. However often _amour-propre_ is in actual fact ill-intentioned toward others, the example of Emile, we observed, proves that it need not always be. Yet the passage just quoted seems to imply just the opposite. Rousseau characterizes the transformation of _amour de soi_

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

into amour-propre as the transformation of "a natural and good passion into another passion that is artificial and bad." Nor is this the only such remark. Rousseau frequently depicts amour-propre as the bad form of self-love.64 Consider, for example, the following celebrated passage from Emile, a passage with which we are not unfamiliar.

> Amour de soi, which regards only ourselves, is contented when our true needs are satisfied. But amour-propre, which makes comparisons, is never content and never could be, because this sentiment, preferring ourselves to others, also demands others to prefer us to themselves, which is impossible. This is how the gentle and affectionate passions are born of amour de soi, and how the hateful and irascible passions are born of amour-propre. (IV:213-14; emphasis added)

This is not quite as harsh a treatment of amour-propre as simply calling it bad, but it is nearly so. Nothing good is attributed to amour-propre. That, combined with the fact that good things are attributed to amour de soi, implies that amour-propre is simply the dark half of Rousseau's dualistic psychological scheme. Which version is true? How shall we resolve the contradiction between our earlier, more ambiguous portrait of amour-propre and the present, darker one?

We might begin by noting that the less ambiguous of the two depictions, the one in which the word "bad" is actually used, is not said in the author's own name.

---

64. So much so that some commentators call it just that. See, for example, Bloom, Love and Friendship, p. 51.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Rather, it comes from the mouth of a character in the *Dialogues*. And while that character, as his name implies, surely does represent Rousseau's own general outlook, we are advised by Rousseau not to consider any of his characters completely reliable when it comes to interpreting the details of his philosophic system -- not even when the character goes by the same last name as the author. (*Dialogues* I:69-70) But that only makes the contradiction less sharp. To resolve it altogether, we need to consider the contexts in which the passages appear and Rousseau's purposes in those passages.

To put it simply, the *amour-propre* which Rousseau disparages in the passages quoted above is bad *amour-propre*, not all *amour-propre*. The *amour-propre* to which he is referring there is the *amour-propre* that *does* generate hateful and irascible passions. Why, then, does he not say so? Why condemn *amour-propre* in such an apparently universal way? Because in point of fact the great majority of *amour-propre* *is* bad. In most people it manifests itself as vanity and envy rather than as virtue. Doubtless it would have made our task as interpreters easier had Rousseau been more precise and supplied a qualification like "usually" or "generally." But sometimes precision has the effect of temporizing: had Rousseau explicitly exempted some forms of *amour-propre* from his condemnations, he would have sacrificed rhetorical power and thus risked diluting

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

the moral effect he hoped to achieve. Rather than weaken the force of his words, he leaves it to the reader to recognize that an author who praises some amour-propre only a few pages after seeming to condemn all of it means for that condemnation to apply to most but not all amour-propre. Only about twenty pages after he seems to decry all amour-propre as the source of "hateful and irascible" passions, Rousseau acknowledges that amour-propre can be the source of "humane and gentle" ones as well.65 One who knows how to read, he might have said, will surely come to the proper interpretation. An author cannot be blamed if his readers have so little regard for context that they fail to resolve a conflict as resolvable as this one -- especially when the author has instructed his readers that to understand his full meaning requires "consistent attention" and much effortful rereading.(Dialogues III: 211)66

As it turns out, the acknowledgement that amour-propre can be the source of "humane and gentle" passions appears in the fourth and last of Rousseau's accounts of the birth of amour-propre.67 This account depicts the genesis of amour-propre not as it typically is but rather as it might and ought to be -- as it will be in Emile. This is a singular discussion; nowhere else does Rousseau recount the birth of good amour-propre, which makes this narration all the more weighty as evidence for our interpretive thesis.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Whatever the difference between Emile's (good) amour-propre and the (bad) amour-propre of nearly everyone else, his, exactly like theirs, owes its birth to cognitive development. Let us look once more at the passage in which Rousseau records the birth of Emile's amour-propre.

> Since my Emile has until now looked only at himself, the first glance he casts on his fellows leads him to compare himself to them. And the first sentiment aroused in him by this comparison is the desire to be in the first position. This is the point where amour de soi turns into amour-propre and where begin to arise all the passions which depend on this one. But to decide whether among these passions the dominant ones in his character will be humane and gentle or cruel and malignant, whether they will be passions of beneficence and commiseration or of envy and covetousness, we must know what position he will feel he has among men, and what kinds of obstacles he

---

65. As John Plamenatz notes, "It was seldom [Rousseau's] way to weaken the effect of his condemnations by qualifying them at the time he made them. He preferred another method; he preferred to unsay in one place what he had said in another." See Man and Society, vol. I (London: Longman Group, Limited, 1963), p. 422. The contradictory descriptions of amour-propre appear at Emile IV:214 and 235 respectively.

---

66. "The Frenchman" has learned how much effort and attention is required even for an imperfect understanding of Rousseau's books: "Before reaching my final conclusion, I resolved to reread his writings with more consistency and attention than I had to that point. I had found ideas and maxims that are very paradoxical, and others that I had not been able to understand well. I believed I had felt inequalities, even contradictions. I hadn't grasped the whole sufficiently to make a sound judgment about a system that was so new to me. Those books are not, like those of today, collections of detached thoughts on each of which the reader's mind can rest. They are the meditations of a solitary person. They require a consistent attention that is not too much to our nation's taste. When one persists in following its thread well, one must reread with effort, and more than once."(Dialogues III:211)

---

67. The third account, which we have dealt with elsewhere in this chapter, appears at Emile IV:213-15.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

> may believe he has to overcome to reach the position he wants to occupy. (IV:235)

"The point where _amour de soi_ turns into _amour-propre_" in Emile is a point defined by cognitive development, the point at which self-consciousness has achieved critical mass, as it were.

The primacy of cognitive development among the causes of _amour-propre_ often goes unrecognized. The more common practice is to point a finger at sexuality.68 As with Adam and Eve and all the rest of us, the end of Emile's original innocence, the birth of his _amour-propre_, is said to be connected to the emergence of adult sexuality. Which is entirely true: _amour-propre_ and sexuality _are_ connected. But sexuality is not the primary cause of _amour-propre_'s birth. If it were, then the savage would have had _amour-propre_ -- which, of course, he did not. (_SD_, 222) Rather, _amour-propre_ is awakened only with the emergence of moralized, self-conscious sexuality. And _that_ is possible only for those whose cognitive development has advanced far enough to include an acquisition which the savage lacked: an awareness of oneself as a separate self related to other selves. In fact, the story of Adam and Eve, read correctly, makes the same point. What brings about their loss of innocence, after all, is a cognitive acquisition, not a sexual one. They eat of the fruit of the tree of the

---

68. See Bloom, "Introduction," p. 17, for example.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

knowledge of good and evil. Only then, in consequence of that, do they become aware of their sexuality and lose their innocence.

The emergence of his sexuality is the condition that prompts the birth of Emile's *amour-propre*. Indeed, sexuality makes this birth inevitable: it inspires in him the irresistible need to consider his attractiveness to others. Nevertheless, there are two reasons to view cognitive development, the emergence of self-consciousness, as the more basic cause of *amour-propre*'s arousal. First, *amour-propre* can and usually does awaken long before sexual development. Emile is the exception: Rousseau's celebrated discourse on babies' tears indicates that most people's *amour-propre* begins to be stirred in infancy; and while it can only develop so much in those early months (because the sense of separate self is only so far advanced), it clearly reaches large and corrupting proportions in most children long before the age at which they develop sexual interest in others. Second, *amour-propre* is *defined* in essentially cognitive terms. In the *Dialogues*, as we have seen, Rousseau refers to *amour-propre* as the "disposition to compare oneself."(II:113) *Amour-propre* always involves comparison; it does not always involve sexuality. Sexual relations (whether actual or merely desired) do tend to be the most intense social relations and those in which *amour-propre* is most deeply invested. But that does not speak

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

against the primacy of cognitive development in arousing _amour-propre_. Indeed, it only confirms it, for the intensity of sexuality is itself owed to cognitive development. Savage sexuality was not intense. It is only the self that is conscious of its separateness that will passionately crave the overcoming of separateness that sexual relations represent.

The primacy of the cognitive in Rousseau's developmental scheme is more than a little ironic. No previous philosopher had elevated the passions and sentiments to such heights. Rousseau not only accords them their due respect as the sole source of human behavior, he celebrates them as well, at least the good ones among them, as the essential content and goal of the good life. He even defines human existence as such in terms of feeling: it is no mistake to see in Rousseau a sentimental reformulation of Descartes' _cogito_. And yet, for all that, cognitive development has priority in writing the terms of the human condition, for it is cognitive development that gives rise to the birth of _amour-propre_, the single greatest influence on our feelings. The decisive "moment" in human development is that at which self-consciousness is achieved, that at which one perceives one's separateness and relatedness to others.[69]

The significance of self-consciousness in Rousseau's thought has not been appreciated as much as it deserves to

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

be. Every major step in human development, and every distinctively human trait, is connected to the development of self-consciousness. It is only by developing a sense of oneself as a separate self that one really begins to live: "strictly speaking, the life of the individual begins" when "he gains consciousness of himself."(*Emile* II:78) And it is only by acquiring a more highly developed self-consciousness that one can claim one's full human birthright. We have just examined the role of self-consciousness in awakening *amour-propre*. In Chapter Four, we examined its role in awakening conscience. We observed that the disposition to feel compassion appears only as one begins to be aware of one's relations with others. Thus, not only *amour-propre* but also the more advanced manifestations of *amour de soi* owe their genesis to self-consciousness. Moreover, it is self-consciousness that gives real meaning to freedom, one of the defining attributes of humanity. Freedom that is not conscious of itself is only a formal freedom, a freedom without content. A self that is unaware of its separateness cannot think about itself; it has inclination but no will, and so cannot

---

69. The intellectual perception of oneself as a separate and related self obviously does not require a very highly developed rational faculty: what is required for the birth of *amour-propre* is only a *per*ception of separateness (and of the fact that other people have independent wills), not a *con*ception. That is why even a small child can have *amour-propre*. He may not understand his relatedness to others, but he does perceive it -- in a way that the pre-adolescent Emile does not.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

exercise its freedom in any meaningful sense. The measure of one's capacity for a fully human life is the measure of one's self-consciousness.

But the capacity for a fully human life necessarily entails the capacity for vice and misery as well. If self-consciousness opens the way to a full flowering of human nature, it also provides fertile soil for the flowers of evil. *Amour-propre*, the source of all the world's evil and most of its misery, arises with the onset of self-consciousness and could almost be defined as aggressive, worried self-consciousness -- what is *amcur-propre* if not the self's response to its vulnerability as a limited, separate self? Self-consciousness, in other words, though morally neutral, nevertheless lies at the heart of all evil and misery.

Accordingly, it is by overcoming this keen sense of separateness that evil and misery are mitigated. Each of Rousseau's theoretical solutions to the human problem can be easily formulated in terms of overcoming separateness. The citizen avoids separateness by being connected to the city -- not just legally, but in the most personal sense. He is part of a larger whole. Jean-Jacques avoids separateness by becoming a whole unto himself: he achieves a level of consciousness at which other people are no longer meaningfully present and at which he is at one with

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

nature. And Emile first _avoids_ separateness by being kept ignorant of his moral relations with others and then _overcomes_ it by falling in love and marrying.

Before attaining self-consciousness, man is less than fully human. But attaining self-consciousness is hardly an end in itself. Indeed, it is not a fulfillment at all but rather a problem: it is only by solving that problem that full, flourishing humanity is achieved. The attainment of self-consciousness gives rise to the human condition as we now know it by reconstituting the requirements of man's well-being.70

Our inquiry into the birth of _amour-propre_ has yielded substantial results. Self-consciousness, we have learned, makes self-esteem contingent and relative and so causes _amour-propre_ to be born. But for all we have learned, one very major question remains unanswered. A comprehensive explanation would tell us not only what triggers the birth of _amour-propre_ but also why it is that it can be triggered at all. Why should the awareness of one's relatedness to others confer on those others such enormous significance?

---

70. The major interpreter who has most highlighted the import of self-consciousness in Rousseau's thought is probably Starobinski. Starobinski does not talk much about self-consciousness _per se_, but he interprets Rousseau's project -- and Rousseau's life -- as the pursuit of totalistic, transparent relations with others, i.e., as the overcoming of separateness and the alienating reflectiveness that goes with it.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Why should it relativize self-esteem, transforming what had been an absolute need for good witness of oneself into the need to compare favorably to others? Why should the experience of other people's wills incite willfulness: why should a small taste of dominion give rise to a lust for rule for rule's sake?[71] We know what awakens _amour-propre_ from latency. What is still wanted is an explanation of the latent potential itself.

But what is wanted is not available. Rousseau never explains why _amour de soi_ is so easily transformed into _amour-propre_. His various accounts of the genesis of _amour-propre_ do not explain the original existence of the potential that is activated.[72] What should we make of this? Does it indicate a deficiency in Rousseau's treatment of self-love? I would suggest the following: Rather than constituting a weakness in Rousseau's account, the absence of such an explanation reflects a kind of intellectual integrity and humility. If Rousseau neglects to explain the potential for _amour-propre_, it is simply because he refuses to speculate about things he knows he cannot know. To offer an explanation of an innate, latent potential would be to claim knowledge of God's intention in

---

71. How easily _amour-propre_ is awakened and how hopeless it is to try to put it back to sleep is discussed in Chapter Two, pages 85-87, above.

---

72. As one commentator puts it, "Rousseau takes an unexplained leap." See Grant, p. .

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

creating man. And that is a species of knowledge that Rousseau, whose every tenet is based entirely on human experience, would not purport to have.

Rousseau, as we know, eschewed speculative metaphysics and theology. When he did discuss God, his focus was usually our experience of him rather than his specific purposes -- as in the Profession of Faith of the Savoyard Vicar, for example. And on the rare occasions that he did speak to God's intentions, as in the Letter to Voltaire, his goal was less to propound his own view of divine will than to refute those who in effect had indicted God for indifference to human suffering. And even there the scope of his arguments was limited: Rousseau's theodical writings, including the Second Discourse[73] and even Emile, justify God's ways by proving the goodness of creation as it was before man fouled it; there is no attempt to justify human suffering as somehow serving God's purpose. ("Everything is good as it leaves the hands of the Author of things; everything degenerates in the hands of man."(Emile I:37)) Rousseau did break new epistemological ground. He supplemented the Enlightenment's naturalistic approach with introspective investigation; he introduced a subjective dimension hitherto unseen among his contemporaries. But the subject of these investigations is

73. For an interpretation of the Second Discourse as a theodicy, see Scott, pp. 696-711.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

himself, his own mind and experience, and not God. Hence he comments upon every question concerning amour-propre except for the one question regarding which his own experience remains silent -- the question of its presence as a latent potential. Unless one is prepared to make the sort of teleological inductions that modern science rejects, one cannot purport to know why any particular disposition is present in man, least of all one which is unnecessary for the species' survival and which causes so much destruction. One is of course entitled to find fault with Rousseau for neglecting to explain amour-propre's presence. One should realize, however, that one's complaint is with modern scientific naturalism and not just with Rousseau.

Of amour-propre's birth we can only know so much. Still, what we know is not insignificant. And there is much more about amour-propre, besides the circumstances of its birth, that we can know. Among those topics: the variability of its extent, the different forms it can take and what determines the forms it takes, and the prospect of transcending it, in whole or in part.

C. How Much Amour-propre, and What Kind?

Gentleness versus Cruelty, Pride versus Vanity

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Once *amour-propre* has been born, two critical questions remain to be settled. First is the question of its character. In some people *amour-propre* becomes pride, in others vanity -- in still others, probably in most, it becomes a mix of the two. Nor is the question of *amour-propre*'s character just a question of how much pride versus how much vanity. It is also a question of what kind(s) of pride, and what kind(s) of vanity. There are as many varieties of pride and vanity, of *amour-propre*, as there are of personality. The second question to be settled is the question of extent. How much, what proportion, of original *amour de soi* will be transformed into *amour-propre*? This is not an issue that Rousseau addresses explicitly, but it is obvious from a cursory survey of the personages that populate his works that the extent of *amour-propre*, and not just its character, varies among people. Emile, for example, is much more a proud young man than a vain one, but he is nowhere near as proud as the citizen. Emile's pride is of a different sort from the citizen's -- i.e. has a different character -- but it is also smaller, as it were: His pride simply does not play the same dominant role, it does not dictate as much thought, feeling and behavior, as does the citizen's. The questions of character and extent are separate, but of course they are also very intimately related to one another. Emile is able to maintain a substantial reservoir

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

of *amour de soi* precisely because his *amour-propre* assumes the character that it does.

Actually, the foregoing formulation is not quite accurate: the questions of *amour-propre*'s character and extent do not "remain to be settled" after its birth; they are settled (at least for a while) as *amour-propre* is being born. Birth and character formation are simultaneous. And they are simultaneous because they stem from a common source: namely, comparing oneself with others. *Amour-propre* is born with the first comparison of self to others, and its basic character is determined by the result of that comparison. Recall that Rousseau introduces the question of *amour-propre*'s character at the very moment that he describes its birth in Emile:

> Since my Emile has until now looked only at himself, the first glance he casts on his fellows leads him to compare himself with them. And the first sentiment aroused in him by this comparison is the desire to be in the first position. This is the point where *amour de soi* turns into *amour-propre* and where begin to arise all the passions which depend on this one. But to decide whether among these passions the dominant ones in his character will be humane and gentle or cruel and malignant, whether they will be passions of beneficence and commiseration or of envy and covetousness, we must know what position he will feel he has among men, and what kind of obstacles he may believe he has to overcome to reach the position he wants to occupy. (IV:235)

In this passage Rousseau poses the question of *amour-propre*'s character in terms of whether it will be gentle or cruel. As we discussed earlier, the question can also be put in terms of whether or not *amour-propre* will form an

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

alliance with _amour de soi_. When _amour-propre_ is gentle and humane, that is because it has aligned itself with and even supports natural pity, which is an expression of _amour de soi_; and when it is cruel and malignant, that is because it has effectively overcome natural pity. Everything depends upon the results of the first comparison. When the first comparison of self to others is favorable, _amour-propre_ assumes a gentle character and moderate proportions and allies itself with the considerable remaining reservoir of _amour de soi_. When the comparison is not favorable _amour-propre_ sours and grows.

But gentleness versus cruelty is only one way to pose the question of _amour-propre_'s character. There is another way. Far more often than he speaks of gentleness and cruelty, Rousseau speaks of pride and vanity. Pride versus vanity is the most basic polarity within the universe of _amour-propre_. Unlike gentleness versus cruelty, it refers to the substance of self-love and not just its aspect.

Just as _amour de soi_ and _amour-propre_ comprise the totality of possibilities in the realm of self-love, so pride and vanity comprise the whole of _amour-propre_. Rousseau refers to pride and vanity as "the two branches of _amour-propre_."(_Corsica_, 326) Thus they constitute a second dualism -- a dualism within a dualism. And this second dualism is only slightly less complex than the first. It

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

is, however, considerably less morally ambiguous.

Beginning with the _First Discourse_, all of Rousseau's writings reflect a subtle consciousness of _amour-propre_'s moral ambiguity. But it is only in his later writings, beginning with _Emile_, that a meaningful distinction between pride and vanity is maintained.74 The first direct comparison is a telling one. Self-love, Rousseau observes, "becomes pride in great souls, vanity in small ones."(_Emile_ IV:215) This is not a Manichaean statement, for it does not categorically smile upon pride. Pride is associated with greatness of soul, but greatness of soul is not thoroughly unproblematic: there is much about it that is morally ambiguous at best. But the statement _is_ definitive in its disparagement of vanity. Whereas the greatness of soul that is associated with pride is an ambiguous thing, the smallness of soul associated with vanity is altogether contemptible. As we saw in Chapter Two, Rousseau judges the quality of lives and souls -- or at least expresses his judgments of them -- in quantitative terms. The goodness of a good life lies in the maximization, the largeness, of existence; similarly, the badness of a bad life is manifest in the smallness of its existence. There is nothing redeeming about smallness of soul, not even the fact that small souls host only petty vices75: petty vices, to judge from Rousseau's assessment of modern life, are all too capable of producing great injustice -- if not individually

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

then in the aggregate. So goes Rousseau's first pronouncement comparing pride and vanity. Pride, by virtue of its association with great souls, is accorded a wary but definite respect. Vanity, by contrast, is accorded no such respect: it is the mark of a contemptible state of soul.

But what *are* pride and vanity? What is the difference between them?

Some have argued that Rousseau offers no clear and workable distinction between the two forms of *amour-propre*.76 Certainly he never does so in a thorough and systematic way. Nevertheless there is a certain consistency to his usage, and it is possible to deduce a fairly specific and sustainable distinction.77 As sub-species of *amour-propre*, both pride and vanity are essentially concerned with the need for a sense of self-worth. The proud man must tend to his need for self-esteem every bit as much as the vain man: each, being self-conscious and comparing himself to others, needs to acquire and maintain a sense of self-worth. How the two men will go about trying to satisfy this need, however, will be very different. The difference between pride and vanity is found in the character of the pursuit of self-worth. It is revealed by the "objects" that are sought as a means to self-esteem, or, to put it another way, by the standard that governs the effort to gain and or keep self-esteem. When the standard governing an individual's pursuit of

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

self-esteem is rooted in reality -- when one's sense of self-worth depends upon achieving something whose value is real and not merely the product of opinion -- pride is at work. When the standard is rooted in appearance or opinion, what we are faced with is vanity.

The essential difference between pride and vanity has to do with the difference between reality and appearance, between being and seeming, but not in the most direct or obvious way. It would be incorrect to say that vanity cares about opinion and pride does not. Vanity _does_ care

---

74. Even in the later writings the distinction is not maintained with perfect consistency. See note 76 below.

---

75. "I do not accuse the men of this century of having all the vices; they have only the vices of cowardly souls; they are only rogues and knaves."(_Last Reply_, 72) "Vile and cowardly even in their vices, they have only small souls."(_Emile_ IV"335)

---

76. John Plamenatz, for example, claims that "Here, as in so many other places, Rousseau fails to make his meaning clear. Are vanity and pride the same emotion, differing only in their causes?" Plamenatz does admit, however, that Rousseau "might have distinguished vanity from pride, if he had ever troubled to do so." See _Man and Society_, pp. 420-23.

---

77. Admittedly, Rousseau is far from perfectly consistent in his use of the terms "pride" and "vanity." What he lacks in semantic consistency, however, is largely made up by conceptual consistency. That is, it is possible to discern what kinds of _amour-propre_ he approves of and what kinds he does not, and why -- and it is _that_ distinction which matters most.

For purposes of clarity, I shall refer to the kinds of _amour-propre_ that Rousseau does endorse as pride; and I shall refer to the kinds of _amour-propre_ that he condemns as vanity. This does not seem unreasonable, since Rousseau himself generally uses the two terms in just that way, especially when he is comparing good and bad _amour-propre_.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

about opinion -- "vanity is the fruit of opinion; it arises from it and feeds upon it" (Corsica, 326) -- but so does pride. Pride too desires respect, at least under normal conditions. Pride, however, seeks respect only in recognition of accomplishments whose value is real, i.e., independent of opinion; it does not want recognition for accomplishments whose whole value is the product of opinion. Like vanity, pride seeks praise; but unlike vanity, it seeks to deserve praise. What pride most wants, even more than praise, is praiseworthiness.

The difference between pride and vanity concerns the grounds on which respect, including self-respect, is sought. In the following passage from the Constitutional Project for Corsica, Rousseau articulates the way in which opinion is the source of the difference between pride and vanity even as he acknowledges the respective ways in which each is tied to opinion.

> Opinion which lays great store by frivolous objects produces vanity; but that which lights on objects intrinsically great and beautiful produces pride. You can thus render a people either proud or vain, depending on the choice to which you direct its judgments.
>
> Pride is more natural than vanity, since it consists in deriving self-esteem from truly estimable goods; whereas vanity, by giving value to that which is valueless, is the work of prejudices which are slow to arise. (326)

The distinction between pride and vanity can be resolved into the following elements: Pride is a feeling of, or desire for, self-worth that is (a) earned and (b)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

based on truly praiseworthy achievement. By "praiseworthy" is meant valuable in itself, either as an end in itself or as a clear means to an end that is valuable in *it*self; if a thing is valuable only on the basis of opinion, it is not praiseworthy. If either of these two conditions is absent, what we have is vanity, not pride. Vanity is a feeling of, or desire for, self-worth that is either (a) unearned or (b) based on achievement that is not truly praiseworthy, or both. If a person applies himself to learning a useful trade and succeeds in learning it well, the feeling of satisfaction he experiences is pride. If he attempts to pass himself off as being more skilled than he is -- i.e., if he seeks unearned credit -- he has violated one of the two defining criteria of pride and so has shown himself to be vain. Similarly, if he seeks credit for something that is good but which has come to him through no effort of his own -- if he derives a sense of self-worth on the basis of noble birth or good looks or native intelligence, for example -- he has violated the same criterion, i.e. he has sought to establish his worth on something that is unearned, and so has exhibited vanity. Among those who fail to meet the first requirement of pride, the requirement that their worth be earned, are the fops and phonies who are such a staple of French literature, from La Rochefoucauld to Molière to the novels of Balzac and Flaubert. (Among great French-language writers only

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Rousseau, it seems, neglected to portray this kind of vanity. He liked to point out that none of the characters in his Nouvelle Heloise was wicked. We might add that none is particularly prone to this sort of pettiness of soul, either.[78]

If a person seeks credit for something that he has in fact accomplished but which is not praiseworthy, he has failed to meet the other requirement of pride, and so he too is vain. This holds true even if the accomplishment is impressive. Few if any accomplishments have been as impressive as Caesar's, for example, but it is Aristides and Brutus who are put forth as exemplars of pride -- Caesar is associated with vanity.[79] If the first kind of vanity is displayed most memorably in satires and novels, the best portrait gallery in which to view the second kind would probably be Plutarch's Lives. When Emile finally reads biographies of "the great" he pities them as discontent creatures of vanity. Far from finding inspiration or models to emulate, he finds in most of Plutarch's lives confirmation of the superiority of his own condition.[80] (There is a major difference between the two kinds of vanity. Rousseau does not depict Caesar et. al. as small-souled. His association of vanity with small souls clearly was intended to apply only to vanity of the first sort and not the second. Those who are vain in the second sense may be as deficient in wisdom as those who are

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

vain in the first sense, but they often exhibit other virtues, as well as a certain largeness of spirit -- which surely accounted at least in part for Rousseau's abiding love of Plutarch.81)

And of course it is possible to qualify as vain on both counts; one can seek to establish one's worth on the basis of something that is neither earned nor praiseworthy. The obnoxious heir to an illicit fortune or to a conqueror's throne would exemplify this combination. Such doubly vain individuals enjoy the rare distinction of being both hated and despised by the same people.

Such is the theoretical distinction between pride and vanity in Rousseau's work. Theoretical distinctions, of course, frequently lose their clarity, if not their entire meaning, when they are applied to reality. Neither of the two criteria by which we have distinguished between pride and vanity is without problems. Earned versus unearned, to take the first criterion, is less an either-or choice than a continuum with an infinite number of points between the two poles. It is the rare achievement in which fortune has not supplemented skill -- indeed, skill itself more often than not owes something to fortune. Moreover, individual psychology further complicates the matter by distorting judgment -- leading some to believe that they deserve credit for what really came to them by chance and others to believe just the reverse, that what they really have

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

achieved is somehow not valid or valuable. As for the

78. "He congratulated himself at the end of Heloise for having sustained interest through six volumes without the help of a single wicked person or a single bad action." (Dialogues II:149) See Confessions IX:411 for descriptions of his characters' universal charm and amiability.

79. See Confessions I:21.

80. Emile's historical studies open his eyes to men's character -- which is to say, to their vanity: "Think of [Emile] at the raising of the curtain, casting his eyes for the first time on the stage of the world; or, rather, set backstage, seeing the actors take up and put on their costumes, counting the cords and pulleys whose crude magic deceives the spectators' eyes. His initial surprise will soon be succeeded by emotions of shame and disdain for his species. He will be indignant at thus seeing the whole of humankind its own dupe, debasing itself in these children's games. He will be afflicted at seeing his brothers tear one another apart for the sake of dreams and turn into ferocious animals because they do not know how to be satisfied with being men. . . .

"All conquerors have not been killed; all usurpers have not failed in their enterprises; several will appear happy to minds biased by vulgar opinions. But he who does not stop at appearances but judges the happiness of men only by the condition of their hearts will see their miseries in their very successes; he will see their desires and their gnawing cares extend and increase with their fortune; he will see them getting out of breath in advancing without ever reaching their goals."(IV:242)

81. Rousseau's enjoyment of Plutarch highlights his distance from an otherworldly religious perspective, the perspective from which critiques of "the great" have usually come. From the latter point of view, the difference between a Caesar and a Cato is ultimately not very great: "Vanity of vanities, saith the Preacher, vanity of vanities; all is vanity."(Ecclesiastes 1:2) What counts for the Preacher and those like him is the paltriness of whatever does not partake of God's glory. Rousseau's critique of Caesar and of mastery in general bears a certain surface resemblance to this view, as seen in Emile's pity for the emptiness of Caesarian ambition. But Rousseau's admiration for virtuous pride reflects his fundamental disagreement with otherworldliness of any kind. Emile disdains the false goods of opinion -- e.g., conquest, glory, etc. -- but the goods he regards as true are very much of this world.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

second criterion, it is, if anything, even more subject to ambiguity. One need not be a moral relativist to recognize that praiseworthiness is a standard which varies considerably -- from people to people, from person to person, and often from situation to situation and even from mood to mood. To say the least, the theoretical distinction between pride and vanity is not always easy to apply in reality.

Nevertheless it is a valid one. The two criteria, whatever their ambiguities, convey real meaning and, what's more, they are widely and intuitively perceived to do so. True, the precise proportions of skill and fortune may elude our analysis of an accomplishment, but that does not mean that we are kept from a rough sense of whether and to what extent the accomplishment is a true achievement, i.e. has been earned. Recognizing the role of fortune in human affairs need not -- and typically does not -- keep one from estimating the part played by skill; it only makes analysis more sophisticated. When Machiavelli carefully disentangles _virtù_ and _fortuna_, he is doing systematically and subtly what people normally do intuitively and roughly.[82] True, too, judgment is often distorted by the

82. Machiavelli's confidence in our ability -- or at least _his_ ability -- to discern the respective roles of skill and fortune is evident from the title of Chapter Twenty-five of _The Prince_: "How Far Human Affairs are Governed by Fortune, and How Fortune can be Opposed." (Trans. George Bull (London: Penguin Books, 1961).)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

individual's psychology. But the fact that we consider the sources of these distortions to be pathologies and that we even have names for them (e.g., narcissistic and borderline disorders) underscores how confident we are in our ability to make rough judgments of earned achievement. As for praiseworthiness, the second criterion, the fact that it is the most hotly disputed of standards does not keep us, individually and as societies, from applying it again and again -- and usually with more confidence than doubt, however misplaced that confidence might sometimes be. (In fact Rousseau would hold that our confidence in our moral judgment is eminently justified, at least when it is based on the universal and divinely inscribed dictates of conscience.83)

Doubtless there are times when it is difficult, perhaps even impossible, to determine whether an instance of _amour-propre_ should be considered pride or vanity. The distinction between pride and vanity is not as sharp, even in theory, as the distinction between _amour-propre_ and _amour de soi_. But the existence of gray areas does not negate the general validity of a distinction; if it did, virtually all psychological thought would be drained of meaning. And besides, there is much area that is not at all gray. Sometimes _amour-propre_ is easily identified as

---

83. Regarding the perfection and universality of conscience's dictates, see Chapter Three, pages 155-61, above.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

vanity. And sometimes, as in the case of Emile, it is easily identified as pride. The following description of Emile's <u>amour-propre</u> is a perfect picture of pride.

> He will have the pride to want to do everything he does well, even to do it better than anyone. He will want to be the swiftest at running, the strongest at wrestling, the most competent at working, the most adroit at games of skill. But he will hardly seek advantages which are not clear in themselves and which need to be established by another's judgment, such as being more intelligent than someone else, talking better, being more learned, etc.; still less will he seek those advantages which are not at all connected with one's person, such as being of nobler birth, being esteemed richer, more influential, or more respected, or making an impression by greater pomp.(IV:339)

This psychological snapshot captures Emile at late adolescence. Presumably he will develop new interests and new objects for his pride as he grows older. But if his pride does in fact remain pride and not curdle into vanity, the principle informing it will not change. His sense of self-worth will continue to be based only on praiseworthy achievement. He will continue to pursue excellence only at things whose value is real: as in adolescence, so in maturity "he will hardly seek advantages which are not clear in themselves and which need to be established by another's judgment," and "still less will he seek those advantages which are not at all connected with one's person."[84]

Pride is not without its dangers. Even in Emile it threatens to destroy the work of his education:

> Emile, in considering his rank in the human species

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

> and seeing himself so happily placed there, will be tempted to honor his reason for the work of yours and to attribute his happiness to his own merit. He will say to himself, "I am wise, and men are mad." In pitying them, he will despise them; in congratulating himself, he will esteem himself more, and in feeling himself to be happier than them, he will believe himself worthier to be so. This is the error most to be feared, because it is the most difficult to destroy. If he remained in this condition, he would have gained little from all our care; and if one had to choose, I do not know whether I would not prefer the illusion of the prejudices to that of pride.(IV:245)

Pride is not without dangers -- but of what sort are the dangers? The danger of which Rousseau speaks is that Emile will be tempted into a false judgment of his own superiority. The "error most to be feared" is an error of attribution -- that Emile will attribute to himself things that in fact are the products of his tutor's work. The danger is that he will claim credit for what he has not earned. The danger, in other words, is that his pride will mutate into vanity: for in claiming unearned credit, Emile will be violating the first of the criteria according to which pride is distinguished from vanity.85 Pride *is* dangerous, but only insofar as it threatens to turn from

---

84. Sophie's pride, too, although different in some respects from Emile's, is based on real merit: "She has that noble pride based on merit which is conscious of itself, esteems itself, and wants to be honored as it honors itself."(V:439)

---

85. True, Rousseau here refers to such an error as "the illusion . . . of *pride*" rather than the illusion of vanity. This is an example of his semantic inconsistency; it does not reflect any inconsistency in his thought. See note 76 above.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

pride into vanity; it is not dangerous in itself. Indeed, the purest pride, the pride of the great man, far from being dangerous, entails a kind of humility:

> Great men are not deceived about their superiority; they see it, feel it, and are no less modest because of it. The more they have, the more they know all that they lack. They are less vain about being raised above us than they are humbled by the sentiment of their poverty; and with the exclusive goods which they possess, they are too sensible to be vain about a gift they did not give themselves. The good man can be proud of his virtue because it is his. But of what is the intelligent man proud? What did Racine do not to be Pradon? What did Boileau do in order not to be Cotin?(Emile IV:245)

There is only one way in which pride can remain pride and yet be dangerous, i.e., one way in which pride can be dangerous in itself: It is possible to feel too much satisfaction and to claim too much recognition for an accomplishment that is one's own and that is praiseworthy. It is possible to love oneself excessively even for one's virtue. Rousseau quietly concedes as much in his discussion of Molière's Misanthrope and again when he warns of the danger that Emile could succomb to the "illusion . . . of pride."(IV:245)86

In the strict sense, all amour-propre is unnatural, including pride. Nevertheless we have seen that "pride is more natural than vanity."(Corsica, 326) (Thus we are not surprised to find a fair amount of pride in Emile, raised by Rousseau to be a "natural man living in the state of

---

86. For the discussion of Alcèste, the title character of the Misanthrope, see d'Alembert, 34-45.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

society."(III:205)) Pride is more natural, Rousseau contends, "since it consists in deriving self-esteem from truly estimable goods; whereas vanity, by giving value to that which is valueless, is the work of prejudices which are slow to arise." That is, pride is more natural than vanity in two ways: first, it is more firmly tied to reality -- it arises only where there are "truly estimable goods"; and, second, it appears earlier in the course of man's or society's development -- that which is truly estimable can serve as the source of self-esteem far earlier than can "prejudices which are slow to arise."87

But the most important sense in which pride is more natural than vanity has to do with its effects. Unlike vanity, pride need not erode the basis either of a good society or of a good life. Because it points to an estimable standard, pride can be a shared social passion and even a social bond: whereas vanity is necessarily

87. That pride appeared earlier in human development than vanity is also evident from the Second Discourse. "The first stirring of pride" occurred as a result of "the first glance [man] directed upon himself."(144) Vanity, on the other hand, required considerably more mental development: it appeared only when "each one began to look at the others and to want to be looked at himself."(149) Thus vanity could not have appeared until much later in the history of the species. Christopher Kelly elaborates on this difference between pride and vanity: "The essence of vanity is this concern with how one is looked at by others. It depends on the developed imaginative ability of thinking about other people's opinions and oneself at the same time. This artificial sentiment distinguishes corrupt civilized humans from both citizens and natural humans, just as pride distinguishes citizens from natural humans." See Rousseau's Exemplary Life, p. 99.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

individualistic and zero-sum with regard to others, we can and do speak of civic pride, a pride in which many individuals share and which unites them.[88]

As for pride's relation to a good life for the individual, we need only recall our earlier discussion of the potential benefits of *amour-propre*. (See pages 229-42, above.) *Amour-propre*, we observed, contributes to romantic and familial love and to virtue, especially heroic virtue. What we can now add is that most of the *amour-propre* that deserves our gratitude or admiration is in fact pride. Indeed, *all* of the *amour-propre* that is good *in itself* is pride. (Vanity has undoubtedly made contributions to our well-being, but only indirectly, i.e., as the unwholesome motivation behind inventions or discoveries that have turned out to have beneficial effects: Rousseau does allow for some of this sort of thing, but not (*pace* Mandeville et. al.) a lot of it.[89]) Pride has a place in the good life, even in Emile's natural version, and not as a

---

88. See Kelly, pp. 98-99.

---

89. Rousseau concedes in the *First Discourse* that vanity has led to a certain amount of useful knowledge and invention. But it has led to far more harm than good. Nor can it serve -- nor can any private vice serve -- as the basis of a good social order. See the *Preface to Narcissus*, pp. 104-06. Rousseau does seem to suggest that vanity could be used to greater advantage than it has been, however. "Vanity is the greatest spring of human conduct." (*Corsica*, 325) As such, it could be used by the wise legislator. Vanity could even be used *against vanity*, as it were: Rousseau advises that sumptuary laws could be made effective by the legislator who "make[s] simplicity a point of vanity."(*Corsica*, 324)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

begrudged concession. On the contrary, pride, as exemplified by Emile, contributes to the good life by allying itself with amour de soi and thus deepening and enlarging existence.

For many who came before Rousseau, most notably those writing from within religious traditions, self-love was synonymous with evil. For Rousseau, of course, this was not the case. Rather than conceive of good versus evil in terms of love of others versus love of self, Rousseau posed the basic moral polarity as good self-love versus bad self-love. (Since every passion and action is motivated by self-love, Rousseau could hardly have done otherwise without denying all possibility of good.) In this, Rousseau has proved to be a major influence on contemporary culture. We today routinely distinguish between good and bad self-love. Ours is a time in which "selfishness" and "egotism" denote vice, but in which self-esteem and self-expression are widely endorsed, and on moral as well as psychological grounds. It is far from clear, however, whether the contemporary popular distinction between good and bad self-love is based on any clear set of understandings, let alone Rousseau's. When is self-love good? When is it bad? By what objective criteria shall we judge? Too many contemporary voices are either silent or simplistic on this matter. Often the implicit criterion is

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

an inevitably disappointing quantitative one: a certain amount of self-satisfaction is approved, even encouraged, while "too much" is regarded as unseemly or obnoxious -- and generally without regard to the magnitude of achievement. (Self-esteem is seen as a precondition, rather than a consequence, of achievement.) Rousseau, by contrast, offers real answers to these questions. His answers are complex and do not correspond to any single polarity, such as _amour de soi_ versus _amour-propre_ or pride versus vanity. Not only does he not condemn all self-love, he does not even condemn all egoism (at least not if we consider pride a form of egoism).

Yet for all their complexity, Rousseau's answers reduce to a theoretically simple formula. Self-love is good when it extends or deepens existence; it is bad when it does the opposite. (See Chapter One.) It can extend and deepen existence in one of three different ways, as exemplified by the citizen, the asocial natural man, and the natural man living in the civil state. What each of these types has in common is an inner wholeness. In each of them self-love is without inner contradiction; it is unmarred by the conflict between nature and society, i.e., between inclination and duty. (See Chapters Two and Three.) This inner wholeness is what unites these men as exemplars of the good life. What distinguishes them from one another is the particular character of that wholeness.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

The citizen's self-love is a wholly social patriotism; to be sure, he loves himself individually, but he loves himself as a citizen, as a part of a greater whole, and so he suffers no existence-diminishing inner contradiction. The self-love of the asocial natural man, whether he be the primitive inhabitant of the state of nature or the exquisitely developed Jean-Jacques, retains its original character and, with it, its original goodness. The self-love of the natural man in the civil state is the most complex. Unlike either of the other two exemplars, Emile has both _amour de soi_ and _amour-propre_ in his soul. Whereas the other two types "resolve" the contradiction between nature and society by siding with one or the other, Emile manages to reconcile nature and society, _amour de soi_ and _amour-propre_, by achieving an alliance between them. All _amour de soi_ is by nature good, and all _amour-propre_ that is allied with _amour de soi_ -- and such _amour-propre_ is always pride, never vanity -- is also good. (See the foregoing sections of the present chapter.) It is only such an alliance which can reconcile the two forms of self-love. It is only such an alliance, in other words, that can make naturalness amid civilization a possibility.

For the natural man (or woman) in the civil state, pride is a good only to the extent that it preserves or protects _amour de soi_. Pride that is satisfying in the moment, but which somehow undermines _amour de soi_ or the

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

joyful existence that it represents, has no place in a natural life -- _no matter how indirect that undermining might be_. A pride, for example, which alienated a lover or spouse would erode the domestic basis on which civilized naturalness rests -- it would undermine _amour de soi_ by creating a psychically corrosive social conflict -- and so has no place in a natural life. Fortunately, however, nature inclines us toward good pride, toward pride that unites us -- at least where "us" refers to men and women. Male and female pride naturally assume different characters in accordance with the psychological needs of the opposite sex. Male pride will tend of its own nature, i.e. without great artifice by parents or tutors, to grow in such directions as will be pleasing to women, and female pride will do the same with respect to men. Indeed, it is just this which makes men and women complementary to one another in more than just the physical sense. The particulars of male and female pride are beyond the scope of the present discussion. We raise the subject only to underscore the decisive importance of consequence, or effect, in determining the goodness or badness of particular cases of _amour-propre_. The relations between the sexes simply present the best context in which to make this point.90

---

90. Rousseau's view of the differences between the sexes on the matter of pride is evident in his portrait of Sophie and in his description of her education. See _Emile_ V:357-410.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Nothing about Emile or Sophie is superfluous. Even their *amour-propre* supports -- and therefore is part of -- their naturalness.

And yet . . . if *amour de soi* is the core of the soul's naturalness and goodness, how much purer must be the soul in which there is *only* *amour de soi*. How much more natural, how much more full of goodness, must be the soul in which there is no *amour-propre*. We turn now to an examination of just this issue. Would it in fact be better if *amour-propre* could be overcome -- if one could possess fully developed human faculties and yet be free of the dangers and limitations of egoism? What is gained in following Jean-Jacques' way rather than Emile's? How accessible is this road? And what, if anything, is lost by travelling it?

III. BEYOND *AMOUR-PROPRE*? PROSPECTS AND POSSIBILITIES

Allan Bloom has interpreted *Emile* as Rousseau's bid to enter the lists against the West's two great and ancient moral-political traditions, the Biblical and the classical. Unlike the prosaic works of other modern philosophy, *Emile* could compete with those traditions on the quasi-aesthetic level of human types. The Biblical and classical traditions, Bloom writes,

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

were accompanied by great works of what might be called poetry. This poetry depicts great human types who embody visions of the right way of life, who make that way of life plausible, who excite admiration and emulation. The Bible, on the highest level, gives us prophets and saints; and in the realm of ordinary possibility it gives us the pious man. Homer and Plutarch give us, at the peak, heroes; and, for everyday fare, gentlemen. Modern philosophy, on the other hand, could not inspire a great poetry corresponding to itself. The exemplary man whom it produces is too contemptible for the noble Muse; he can never be a model for those who love the beautiful. The fact that he cannot is symptomatic of how the prosaic new philosophy truncates the human possibility. With _Emile_ Rousseau confronts this challenge and dares to enter into competition with the greatest of the old poets. He sets out to create a human type whose charms can rival those of the saint or the tragic hero -- the natural man -- and thereby shows that his thought too can comprehend the beautiful in man.[91]

Bloom's interpretation may very well be an accurate representation of Rousseau's self-understanding in writing _Emile_. But _Emile_ is not Rousseau's only book, and its hero is not Rousseau's only exemplar. Emile is not even Rousseau's only exemplar of naturalness -- Jean-Jacques is another. Nor, significantly, is Emile the greater of the two. Thus, if we look at Rousseau's entire corpus and not just at _Emile_, another interpretation, somewhat different from Bloom's, suggests itself. According to this interpretation, Rousseau matches the Biblical and classical traditions by offering two exemplary types, of which one represents the peak of human possibility as such and the other the best life available to the man of ordinary gifts.

---

91. "Introduction," p. 6.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Emile, according to this interpretation, is the latter of the two. Rather than Rousseau's answer to the saint or the tragic hero, as Bloom suggests, he is best seen as Rousseau's answer to the Bible's pious man and the Greeks' gentleman. Like those two, Emile belongs to "the realm of ordinary possibility."92 As for the saint or the tragic hero, Rousseau's answer to them is Jean-Jacques. It is Jean-Jacques whom Rousseau puts forth as the highest human type.

Or, rather, it is Jean-Jacques at his latest and best whom Rousseau puts forth as the highest human type. We learned earlier that there is no avoiding amour-propre in civilization. Jean-Jacques was no exception to this rule.93 Amour-propre was born in him as it is born in all social men. Indeed, unlike Emile, he knew amour-propre, both as pride and as vanity, at a very young age. What's more, he was to become an author, a choice which usually means -- and which did mean even for him -- excessive amour-propre: "I never had much of a bent for amour-propre, but this factitious passion had become magnified in me when

---

92. "I have assumed for my pupil neither a transcendent genius nor a dull understanding. I have chosen [Emile] from among the ordinary minds in order to show what education can do for man."(IV:245; also see I:52)

93. Nowhere in Rousseau's work is it suggested that amour-propre can be avoided by civilized human beings. Indeed, he forcefully insists on the contrary. See pages 223-28, above, for elaboration on "Amour-propre's Inevitability."

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

I was in the world, especially when I was an author. I had perhaps even less of it than others, but I had it prodigiously."(*Reveries* VIII:115)94 What is outstanding about Jean-Jacques is not that he managed to avoid *amour-propre* (he obviously didn't) but that he managed to transcend it and return his soul to *amour de soi* -- not completely, but very considerably.95

We have concentrated throughout this chapter on the essential relation between *amour-propre* and the need for self-esteem, or good witness of oneself. The formula which expresses this relation is that *amour-propre* exists only (a) when, (b) to the extent that, and (c) for as long as, self-esteem is problematic or contingent. In Emile we have seen the truth of the first two parts of the formula. In Jean-Jacques we see the truth of the third part. Jean-Jacques achieves freedom from *amour-propre* by reaching a state in which self-esteem is no longer problematic.

What is it that makes the need for good witness of oneself, for self-esteem, so problematic? As we discovered earlier, there is a certain impenetrable mystery here -- impenetrable, at least, to those, like Rousseau, who decline to speculate about divine or natural purposes. But if we remain ignorant of ultimate causes, we did discover the proximate and triggering ones: What triggers the transformation of the need for good witness of oneself from a simple and easily satisfied requirement into a

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

chronically complex and difficult one is the development of self-consciousness. Consciousness of oneself as a separate self related to other separate selves prompts, even if it

---

94. The story of Jean-Jacques' self-love, beginning with the birth of _amour-propre_ in early childhood, is recounted in the _Confessions_. The _Confessions_, as Kelly demonstrates, can be read as the story of Jean-Jacques' journey from an unnatural condition in which he was subject to the vicissitudes of _amour-propre_ to a return to nature, i.e., to a considerable transcendence of _amour-propre_.

---

95. To what extent, exactly, has Jean-Jacques overcome _amour-propre_? As long as he is left alone and "socializes" only with creations of his imagination, Jean-Jacques is altogether free of _amour-propre_. It is only during the relatively brief and infrequent periods during which he is drawn into the world that he suffers any _amour-propre_: "Everything brings me back to the happy and sweet life for which I was born. I pass three-fourths of my life occupied with instructive and even agreeable objects in which I indulge my mind and my senses with delight, or with the children of my fancy whom I have created according to my heart and whose company sustains its sentiments, or with myself alone, satisfied with myself and already full of the happiness I feel to be due me. In all this, _amour de soi_ does all the work; _amour-propre_ has nothing to do with it. This is not the case during the sorrowful moments I still pass in the midst of men -- a plaything of their treacherous flattery, bombastic and derisive compliments, and honeyed malignity. No matter what I might try to do, _amour-propre_ then comes into play. The hatred and animosity I discern through the coarse wrapping of their hearts tear my own heart apart with sorrow; and the idea of being taken for a dupe in this foolish way adds a very childish spite to this sorrow -- the result of a foolish _amour-propre_ whose complete folly I sense, but which I cannot overcome."(_Reveries_ VIII:117-18) A similar portrait emerges from the _Dialogues_, in which "Rousseau" remarks that Jean-Jacques is without vanity (II:106) (Jean-Jacques is said to be proud (122), however, and to care about his honor (139)). Presumably the observation refers to the large majority of the time that Jean-Jacques spends alone or with the rare friendly visitor such as "Rousseau," and not to the time he spends in unfortunate company. For more on Jean-Jacques' lack of _amour-propre_ in the _Dialogues_ and the contrast this makes with his persecutors, see Christopher Kelly and Roger Masters' "Introduction" to the _Dialogues_, pp. xxiv-xxv.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

does not fully account for, this vast complication of the human condition. That being so, it will come as no surprise to find that Jean-Jacques has achieved an exceptional kind of consciousness, to find that he has managed to transcend ordinary self-consciousness (or what Christopher Kelly has called "civilized self-consciousness96) -- again, if not all the time, at least much of the time. If it is self-consciousness that complicates the need for self-esteem and thus gives rise to _amour-propre_, it is the overcoming of ordinary self-consciousness that _un_complicates the need for self-esteem and thus takes one beyond _amour-propre_.97 If it is a cognitive step which initiates the development of _amour-propre_, it is a cognitive step which can take one beyond _amour-propre_. Such is the meaning of Jean-Jacques' story. The way to understand his transcendence of _amour-propre_ is thus to examine his exceptional cognitive condition.

Rousseau's most extensive portrait of himself as natural man is that of the _Dialogues_. (The _Confessions_ is the longer book, but only the final part, a relatively small fraction of the whole, is devoted to the triumphant, natural Jean-Jacques -- in most of its pages Jean-Jacques

---

96. See Kelly, p. 243.

97. Note that _overcoming_ ordinary self-consciousness does not mean _undoing_ it. Jean-Jacques maintains an extraordinary level of self-awareness, as his autobiographical work makes abundantly clear. See pages 337-40, below.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

is "unnatural" and suffers the vicissitudes of *amour-propre*.) But the words of the *Dialogues* are spoken by others: Jean-Jacques himself never appears directly or speaks for himself. And even if the interlocutors are trustworthy in their portrayals of Jean-Jacques, there is much that they cannot know and hence cannot tell us. As the full title of the work suggests, "Rousseau" and "the Frenchman" *judge* Jean-Jacques -- they do not speak for him or represent his experience to us. Thus it is not the *Dialogues* but rather the *Confessions* and the *Reveries* to which we must turn for the information we seek.98 And what we find in those works is a series of experiences in which ordinary or civilized self-consciousness has been overcome.

In the *Confessions* Rousseau recounts his exile on the ile de Saint-Pierre. There, separated from the larger world and spending most of his time in solitude, Jean-Jacques discovers "the delightful pleasures of inaction and a contemplative life."(*Confessions* XII:617) The contemplative life described here has little in common with the classical philosophic ideal. The pleasure described is not the pleasure of rigorous inquiry or speculation or even myth-making, but rather the pleasure of intimate and innocent communion with nature. Rather than cite the

---

98. To reiterate, we shall be considering the Jean-Jacques of the *Reveries*, the *Dialogues* and the latter parts of the *Confessions* to be one and the same person. Most of the differences between these texts are methodological, not substantive.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

philosopher, Rousseau invokes two very different other types: What characterizes his distinctive variety of the contemplative life is "the indolence . . . of a _child_ which is necessarily in motion doing nothing, and that of a _dotard_ who wanders while his limbs are at rest."(620; emphasis added) Sometimes his communion with nature comes by way of concentrating on particulars, as when he engages in botany.99 At other times it comes through "abandoning [him]self to reveries without object" -- reveries which bring him so close to nature that he "sometimes exclaim[s], O nature! O my mother!"(622) Whereas most people continue to think about others even when they are alone, Jean-Jacques finds solitude to be liberating. He ceases to be concerned about how he stands with others. Which is to say, he ceases to be self-conscious in the ordinary way and thus escapes the grip of _amour-propre_.

It is in the _Reveries_, though, that ordinary self-consciousness is most completely transcended. A number of instances are recounted in which the boundaries of Jean-Jacques' self expand or even dissolve. The _com_munion of the _Confessions_ gives way to outright union, either with nature or with existence.100 To be sure, these are peak experiences and do not constitute the sum of Jean-Jacques' inner life; they are not constant. But they do seem to be regular. And the difference between these moments and the time in between, the non-peak moments, would seem to be

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

mostly a difference of degree, and not so great a difference at that.

In the Fifth Walk we are treated to another description of Jean-Jacques' experience on the ile de Saint-Pierre. This time, however, we are told more about the nature of the experience and of the consciousness that made it possible. What we find is the fading away of the separate-self sense, a transcendence of civilized self-consciousness.

> When evening approached, I would come down from the heights of the island and gladly go sit in some hidden nook along the beach at the edge of the lake. There, the noise of the waves and the tossing of the water, captivating my senses and chasing all other disturbance from my soul, plunged it into a delightful reverie in which night would often surprise me without my having noticed it. The ebb and flow of this water and its noise, continual but magnified at intervals, striking my ears and eyes without respite, took the place of the internal movements which reverie extinguished within me and was enough to make me feel my existence with pleasure and without taking the trouble to think. From time to time some weak and short reflection about the instability of things in this world arose, an image brought on by the surface of the water. But soon these weak impressions were erased by the uniformity of the continual movement which lulled me and which, without any active assistance from my soul, held me so fast that, called by the hour and agreed-upon signal, I could not tear myself away without effort.(V:67)

---

99. For a description of Jean-Jacques' unusual botanical investigations, see _Confessions_ XII:620. Also see Paul A. Cantor, "The Metaphysics of Botany: Rousseau and the New Criticism of Plants," _Southwestern Review_, 70, 1985.

---

100. Paul Cantor has suggested that Rousseau's step from enthralled admiration of nature to outright union with it, a step he locates in the Second Walk of the _Reveries_, marks the birth of Romanticism.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

What is described in this passage is a kind of thoughtless but not unconscious feeling of existence. Far from unconsciousness or regression, this is a state of consciousness which is above and beyond thought and language. Everyday passions and concerns, everything that marks our normal consciousness -- including even the sense of time and space -- is transcended, making this state the best and purest, the most Godlike, available to man:

> if there is a state in which the soul finds a solid enough base to rest itself on entirely and to gather its whole being into, without needing to recall the past or encroach upon the future; in which time is nothing for it; in which the present lasts forever without, however, making its duration noticed and without any trace of time's passage; without any other sentiment of deprivation or of enjoyment, pleasure or pain, desire or fear, except that alone of our existence, and having this sentiment alone fill it completely; as long as this state lasts, he who finds himself in it can call himself happy, not with an imperfect, poor, and relative happiness such as one finds in the pleasures of life, but with a sufficient, perfect and full happiness which leaves in the soul no emptiness it might feel a need to fill. Such is the state in which I often found myself during my solitary reveries on the ile de Saint-Pierre, either lying in my boat as I let it drift with the water or seated on the banks of the tossing lake; or elsewhere, at the edge of a beautiful river or of a brook murmuring over pebbles.
>
> What do we enjoy in such a situation? Nothing external to ourselves, nothing if not ourselves and our own existence. As long as this state lasts, we are sufficient unto ourselves, like God.(68-69)

In the experience described in these passages nature provides a setting wherein the boundaries of the separate self dissolve. All the particulars (thoughts, passions, etc.) and even the dimensions of the separate self's existence disappear from consciousness. All that is left -

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

- all that the self _is_ -- is the sentiment of existence.

Other passages tell of related but somewhat different experiences, experiences in which nature not only provides the setting but also serves as the object of identification. Here, as in the experience recounted above, the self dissolves into, or achieves union with, something greater than itself. But that "something greater" is now nature, in all its intricate harmony, rather than existence, which is a much more undifferentiated and abstract thing. The self merges with a whole, but a whole which is known through its many parts and whose attractiveness lies precisely in the harmony between those parts -- a whole which is apprehended as a _system_: "I never meditate, I never dream more deliciously than when I forget myself. I feel ecstasies and inexpressible raptures in blending, so to speak, into the system of beings and in making myself one with the whole of nature."(VII:95) Such is the appeal of botany for such a one as Jean-Jacques:

> The more sensitive a soul a contemplator has, the more he gives himself up to the ecstasies this harmony arouses in him. A sweet and deep reverie takes possession of his senses then, and through a delicious intoxication he loses himself in the immensity of this beautiful system with which he feels himself one. Then, all particular objects elude him; he sees and feels nothing except in the whole.(VII:92)

It bears repeating that these self-forgettings are moments of transcendence rather than regression.101 To be sure, there is a sense in which Jean-Jacques seems to

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

return to the condition of the savage. Like the savage, he enjoys psychic balance and harmony and no longer depends on others for the sentiment of his existence. But he also retains a level of awareness and an aesthetic sensibility -- not to mention a scientifically trained eye[102] -- that the savage lacked. He retains a highly developed intellectual capacity and an aesthetic sensibility that is perhaps more highly developed still. Indeed, he *uses* these capacities in achieving and maintaining his peak experiences: integral to these experiences is the ability to perceive nature in its unity and diversity and to enjoy it for its complex harmony. Far from regression, Jean-Jacques' experiences suggest that he has added new dimensions or even wholly new capacities to the ordinary complement of mental powers. Thus the ground he shares with the savage is only the first word of Jean-Jacques' story: Each of the two men lacks civilized self-consciousness, but whereas the savage has not yet achieved self-consciousness, Jean-Jacques has gone beyond it even while retaining its positive elements -- which is the true meaning of transcendence. (Transcendence entails incorporation of that which has been transcended. As Hegel would put it, "To supercede is at once to negate and to preserve."[103]) Doubtless the savage slept well and enjoyed peace of mind, but it is unthinkable that he could have felt the wonder and ecstasy felt by Jean-Jacques. Jean-

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

101. The experiences described in the Reveries bear striking similarities to various accounts of mystical experiences. Religious mystics in particular, both Western and Eastern, have reported many of the same things that Rousseau reports: blissful or ecstatic self-forgetting, the disappearance of an awareness of time, and the sense of union or communion with a greater Being or system. Needless to say, those who have or pursue such experiences interpret them as transcendent rather than regressive. Among those who have professed to examine these claims from the standpoint of science, interpretations are mixed. Strict Freudians have dismissed such experiences as regressions to a relatively undifferentiated ego state. (See Freud, Civilization and Its Discontents, trans. and ed. James Strachey (New York: W.W. Norton & Company, 1961, pp. 9-21; Standard Edition, 21:64-73.) Others, however, have strongly disagreed. Erich Neumann, a Jungian, has propounded a developmental scheme in which the ego, after achieving self-consciousness, advances to a state in which it retains its individuality but also experiences a *higher* kind of undifferentiatedness. (See "Mystical Man," in The Mystic Vision: Papers from the Eranos Yearbooks, ed. Joseph Campbell (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1968, 1968).) And Neumann is not alone. Psychologists from William James to today's humanistic and transpersonal schools have argued that much of what is regarded as mystical experience indicates a more advanced state of consciousness. What Freud saw as regression to undifferentiatedness they have seen as higher-level integration. In this they have purported to validate the psychologies, some of them quite ancient, which were developed by various religious traditions.

102. Jean-Jacques is able to derive spiritual benefit from botany only because he has a substantial scientific background in it: "However elegant, admirable, and variegated the structure of plants may be, it does not strike an ignorant eye sufficiently to fix the attention. The constant analogy, with, at the same time, the prodigious variety which reigns in their conformation, gives pleasure to those only who have already some idea of the vegetable system. Others at the sight of these treasures of nature feel nothing more than a stupid and monotonous admiration. They see nothing in detail because they know not for what to look, nor do they perceive the whole, having no idea of the chain of connexion and combinations which overwhelms with its wonders the mind of the observer."(Confessions XII:620)

103. Phenomenology of Spirit, p.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Jacques' experiences are "uncivilized," but they are *more* than civilized, and they are achieved by an exquisitely developed soul.

Which raises an important question: to whom is this kind of high-level experience available? Who can transcend *amour-propre*? We know that Rousseau considers it theoretically possible for anyone to become an Emile or Sophie. As extraordinary as they each become, Emile and Sophie are ordinary in their natural endowments.104 Does the same thing hold true of Jean-Jacques? Or must some extraordinary conditions obtain, either natural or circumstantial, for those who would follow him?

To begin with, even if it *were* possible for a person of ordinary gifts to become a Jean-Jacques, the opportunity to do so is easily lost -- and most of us would find that we lost the opportunity very early in life. No one in whom *amour-propre* has taken deep root, especially in the form of vanity -- and that, alas, includes most of us -- can hope to escape its grip. "Once we have started to measure ourselves [in comparison with others], *we never stop*, and from then on the heart occupies itself only with placing everyone else beneath us." So says "Rousseau" in the *Dialogues*.(II:113; emphasis added) A similar statement,

---

104. "I shall never repeat often enough that I am leaving prodigies aside. Emile is no prodigy, and Sophie is not one either."(V:393) For more of the same regarding Emile alone, see I:52 and IV:245.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

one that we have already seen, appears in _Emile_: "The sole folly of which one cannot disabuse a man who is not mad is vanity." (IV:245)

Then again, the same thing is true of the natural education elaborated in _Emile_. There, too, Rousseau repeatedly warns of missteps which could easily subvert the entire project. Is the path followed by Jean-Jacques "only" as difficult as the one followed by Emile? Or is it even more difficult -- was it necessary for Jean-Jacques, and would it be necessary for those who wish to follow him, to be extraordinary in one way or another?

The answer is that Jean-Jacques' return to nature, his transcendence of _amour-propre_, required both extraordinary natural gifts and extraordinary circumstances. And while those who follow a path need not always be as outstanding as the one who has discovered it, in this case it seems safe to say that the natural life à la Jean-Jacques remains the potential province of a very small few.

The essential precondition for achieving Jean-Jacques' version of naturalness is solitude.105 To suppose that people can live together and yet be free of _amour-propre_ is a fantastic notion -- literally: the only places where such a life is imagined are the "monde ideal" depicted in the _Dialogues_ and (to a lesser degree) Rousseau's "If-I-were-a-

---

105. Recall that _amour-propre_ promptly reasserts itself in Jean-Jacques when he ventures out of his solitude. See note 93, above.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

rich-man" daydream in Emile, fantasies both. (Dialogues I:9-12, Emile IV:344-54) Yet very few are capable of choosing solitude or using it well. Even Jean-Jacques, whose extraordinary sensitivity and inclinations make him uniquely capable of enjoying solitude once he is in it, had to be forced into it. (Persecuted by the authorities and alienated from his former friends, he was effectively forced to the fringes of society.106) And this despite the fact that he knew solitude's value and had already had some small tastes of it. How much less likely, then, that many others will choose what even he did not.

To choose solitude is different from fleeing society or being cast out. One must be able to resist the pull of the social passions, even those that are good. To judge from Jean-Jacques' experience -- and there is no other recourse, as Rousseau makes no pronouncement on this matter -- such resistance is beyond most people's strength. It is important to note not only the "assistance" provided him by circumstances, but also the fact that he finds contentment in solitude only at a relatively advanced age, an age at which, by his own admission, his social passions have been banked. The goods of the social world may deliver less than the goods found in solitude, but they apparently seem to promise more. And indeed, it is far from clear that

106. See Kelly, pp. 247-48, on the role of accident in Jean-Jacques' return to nature.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

most people could find much good in solitude even if they were forced into it. Most people are not like Jean-Jacques, after all -- they cannot abandon themselves so joyfully to physical nature and they certainly cannot satisfy their social needs, and especially their sexual needs, through imagination. Add to all this the inconvenient fact that it would be logistically and probably geographically impossible for more than a few to be sustained in lives of rustic idleness, and we have a way of life destined to appeal to few and to be realized by even fewer.

This does not render Jean-Jacques irrelevant, however. Like his counterparts in the Bible and in classical literature, he is the peak that defines the terrain below. If his experience is beyond the reach of all but the few (perhaps all but the one), others can at least take some steps in his direction. If the air of solitude is too thin or its slope too steep for them, they can at least make camp in the surrounding foothills. Following the advice offered in the *Lettres morales*, they can retreat into the rustic simplicity of country life and so liberate themselves from a good part of their feverish *amour-propre*. Even modest steps in this direction represent increased naturalness and enlarged existence.

Would it be best to be without *amour-propre*? It would

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

seem so, if not for humanity as a whole, at least for the person capable of achieving this goal. Jean-Jacques, whose singular freedom from *amour-propre* makes him the most natural of men, is held aloft by Rousseau as the highest human type. But overcoming *amour-propre* is not necessary for a good life, or even for a natural life. What the good life requires is an absence of inner conflict and a rough balance between desire and faculty. As we saw in Chapter Two, when these conditions are met, existence is enlarged and life is good. And while this certainly is achieved when *amour-propre* is transcended, it can also be achieved by those in whom *amour-propre* is present -- as witness the citizen, whose dominant psychic principle is well-trained (i.e. virtuous and patriotic) *amour-propre*, and "the natural man in the state of society," in whom *amour-propre* is allied with *amour de soi*. What is required is for the good life is "only" that self-love be well-ordered.107 What is required for the natural life is "only" that *amour-propre* be limited and allied with *amour de soi*. Neither the good life in general nor the natural life in particular requires a return to the savage's state of soul. The

---

107. It is incorrect to finger *amour-propre per se* as the villain in Rousseau's moral scheme. It is only when *amour-propre* is inflamed or when it produces certain kinds of personal dependence that it becomes destructive of happiness and morality. For more on this point, see Dent, *Rousseau*, pp. 52-67 and 70-85, and Melzer, pp. 70-85. For a systematic treatment of when personal dependence is corrupting and when it is not, see Grant, pp.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

citizen is obviously far from savagery; Emile, though raised to be a "civilized savage," is far more civilized than savage; and Jean-Jacques, the exemplar of the one variety of the good life that shares the savage's lack of amour-propre, has perhaps traveled the farthest of all.

And yet -- if each of the varieties of the good life is far removed from savage simplicity, each also has something in common with it. Every variety of the good life entails replicating the savage's psychic unity and balance.108 Sometimes this replication is a matter of maintaining the native state of psychic unity and balance (Emile), sometimes a matter of recovering it (Jean-Jacques)109, and sometimes a matter of artificially recreating it (the citizen). Thus each of Rousseau's versions of the good life, in addition to manifesting progress beyond savagery, also entails replicating it. Savage origins are both transcended and not transcended. It is important to recognize both elements of this truth:

---

108. Recall Strauss' formulation: "Rousseau's answer to the question of the good life takes on this form: the good life consists in the closest possible approximation to the state of nature which is possible on the level of humanity." See Natural Right and History, p. 282. What Strauss says applies to each of Rousseau's varieties of the good life. See Chapter Two, above.

---

109. Emile exemplifies maintenance: he never ceases to be natural. Jean-Jacques exemplifies return: he is alienated from nature at an early age but later returns to nature at a higher level. His combination of progress and return can be compared to climbing a spiral staircase: he ends up directly above where he began.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

to overlook the first part is to mistake Rousseau for a romantic reactionary, while to overlook the second is to cast him, inaccurately, as a simple progressive. The fact is that Rousseau upholds both principles, both progress and replication.

As for which of the two principles has priority, that perhaps is not a fair question -- each is upheld with equal consistency and force. There is a sense, however, in which the second principle, the principle of replication, can be said to be foremost in Rousseau's good lives, for it informs the first. That is, progress would not be progress, would not be true progress, if the savage's psychic unity and balance had not been replicated. There can be no good life without significant replication of these qualities of the savage. And if the principle of replication has primacy in all varieties of the good life, its primacy in the natural life, whether Emile's version or Jean-Jacques', is even more pronounced. In addition to psychic unity and balance, naturalness also requires that <u>amour de soi</u> be the leading principle of soul, thus making the natural man's replication of the savage soul a substantive, and not merely a formal, thing.

The goodness of the good life derives first and foremost from psychic unity and balance, qualities which existed most perfectly in the state of nature. Similarly, the naturalness of the natural life derives from the

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

primacy of _amour de soi_ over _amour-propre_, a condition which also obtained most perfectly in the state of nature. What all this means is that the primary goal of those who would pursue one or another of Rousseau's versions of the good life, and especially the natural versions exemplified by Emile and Jean-Jacques, must be the replication of the savage's quality of soul. There are other goals, to be sure, but that is the first one, the one without which the others will be either unattainable or meaningless. However high one aspires to climb, one's aspiration must take its bearings from a being who, among other things, utterly lacked aspiration himself. It is this peculiar combination of high and low, of transcendence and nontranscendence, that gives to Rousseau's vision of human possibilities its uniquely paradoxical character.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

CHAPTER FIVE:

CRITICAL REFLECTIONS ON ROUSSEAU'S NATURALISM

One of the goals of this study has been to show that nature is more than just a formal standard for Rousseau -- to show that naturalness for civilized man entails something more than just an inevitably inferior replication of the savage's goodness and wholeness. It _is_ that, but it is also more than that. Emile does bear a certain similarity to the savage -- like the savage, he enjoys a fair degree of psychic integrity and is not the captive of tyrannical _amour-propre_ -- and for this he is called a natural man, just as the savage is. And the same is true of Jean-Jacques. But Emile's and Jean-Jacques' naturalness does not end with this formal similarity to the savage. It also has a substantive dimension, a dimension which the savage lacks.

The formal dimension of naturalness, the dimension common to all three variants of natural men, is manifest in harmony, or what Rousseau calls order. Everyone whom Rousseau calls natural enjoys a twofold harmony: an interior or psychic harmony, meaning a lack of inner conflict and an equal balance between desires and

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

faculties, and an exterior harmoniousness, a harmonious disposition toward the rest of the world. And this harmony -- again, in every kind of natural man -- is produced and maintained by the preeminence of amour de soi in the soul. Each of these characteristics was present in the savage every bit as much as in Emile or Jean-Jacques. Indeed, the savage enjoyed an even more perfect harmony than they do, for he was completely untouched by unnatural influences or circumstances whereas they, for all their success at achieving or maintaining naturalness, are not altogether untouched by those things. The savage alone was absolutely free of amour-propre. At this level, the savage represents the human ideal; Emile and Jean-Jacques only approximate what the savage fully realized. What Emile and Jean-Jacques have that the savage lacked, though -- and herein begins the particular substance of post-state of nature naturalness -- is a love of harmony.

The love of harmony, which Rousseau calls conscience,[1] is what naturalizes those faculties and dispositions which were not present in the savage but which do arise in Emile and Jean-Jacques. (The love of harmony is also the source of Emile's and Jean-Jacques' superiority over the savage,

---

1. Recall that he defines conscience as the love of order; see Chapter Three, pages 169-70, below. The reader will note that I have sometimes substituted "harmony" for "order." It seems to me that, to contemporary ears, "harmony" comes closer to Rousseau's meaning than the original "order" (l'ordre).

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

notwithstanding the latter's more perfect harmony. Although the savage's harmony was more perfect than their's, their's is self-conscious and more complex and therefore more impressive and more rewarding.) As we have seen, this love of harmony is more than a mere taste or aesthetic preference. It is a principle of soul, and as such it informs the development of all the soul's desires and accounts for everything that is sublime in man. The love of harmony yields a particular psychic arrangement, an arrangement which constitutes the substance of civilized naturalness. This is not to say that every civilized natural man would be exactly alike, that every child reared like Emile would end up indistinguishable from him. Rousseau leaves room for variation among natural men. He quite clearly allows that much of the civilized natural man's character will derive from innate temperament or some other personal circumstance and not just from his education.2 But there are certain basic characteristics common to every civilized natural man. There _is_ a certain substance that defines civilized naturalness. The investigative yield of the preceding two chapters, from the sublimation of sexuality to the alliance between a preeminent _amour de soi_ and a well governed _amour-propre_, is the stuff of civilized naturalness generally and not

---

2. See, for example, the discussion in _Emile_ regarding the choice of a trade, wherein tutors are advised to take into account their pupils' particular genius.(III:98-201)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

just a description of Emile. And this substance opens an enormous distance between the civilized natural man and his savage forebear. "There is a great difference between the natural man living in the state of nature and the natural man living in the state of society." (Emile III:205)

And yet -- for all the differences between them, civilized and savage naturalness are also intimately related. Indeed, civilized naturalness is fundamentally informed by savage naturalness; Emile is indeed a true descendant of the savage. For although the similarity between the two versions of naturalness is largely formal, what is formal can have -- in this case, does have -- enormous substantive implications. As we have seen, everything that Rousseau calls natural in the civil state is so designated because it meets the formal criterion of promoting or preserving amour de soi. It is this formal criterion which determines, if only by process of elimination, what should and what should not be considered natural in the civil state. Thus if one of the major themes of this study has been the difference between civilized and savage naturalness, another has been their closeness, and, in particular, the sense in which the former takes its bearings from the latter.

It is instructive to look at the passage from which the statement quoted above is drawn. After insisting upon the "great difference between the natural man living in the

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

state of nature and the natural man living in the state of society," Rousseau seems to underscore the point by stating that "Emile is not a savage to be relegated to the desert." But this statement is perhaps not as strong as it might at first seem. Rousseau says only that Emile is not a savage to be relegated to the <u>desert</u>. He does not say that Emile is no kind of savage at all. Indeed, his next statement is that Emile "is a savage made to inhabit cities."[3] To be sure, it would be unwise to read too much into what might have been intended as nothing more than a loose comparison or metaphor. But even metaphors have meaning, and it is not for nothing that Rousseau calls his Emile a civilized savage. Emile <u>is</u> a kind of savage. Although he develops all the faculties and capacities of civilized man, he manages to do so without losing his original goodness. Whereas the rest of us became civilized only by leaving nature's garden, Emile has managed to import the fruits of civilization (and only its fruits) into it. Though he is much more than a savage, he is a savage first and foremost. And therein lies the enormous promise of Rousseau's

---

3. The complete paragraph reads as follows: "I will be told that I abandon nature. I do not believe that at all. It chooses its instruments and regulates them according to need, not to opinion. Now, needs change according to the situation of men. There is a great difference between the natural man living in the state of nature and the natural man living in the state of society. Emile is not a savage to be relegated to the desert. He is a savage made to inhabit cities. He has to know how to find his necessities in them, to take advantage of their inhabitants, and to live, if not like them, at least with them."(III:205)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

naturalism, as well as some of its most problematic aspects. First, the promise.

A RETURN TO WHOLENESS

What is it that Rousseau offers?

With his dual-level conception of nature Rousseau purports to show the way out of the debasement of modern civilization. His dual-level conception allows him to establish once more the naturalness of the sublime and thereby to redeem human dignity from the clutches of modern scientific naturalism. Without repudiating the general principles of modern science -- indeed, while sharing them -- he rescues humanity from the scythe of scientism. Not that the publication of _Emile_ would or even could pave the way for a multitude of natural men: Rousseau never believed that any of his theoretical solutions, including the natural education of _Emile_, could be translated into practice. But if it could not bring about the triumph of nature, goodness and happiness, his philosophic defense of the sublime could at least stem the worst tendencies of modernity and perhaps even point an enlightened few toward something approaching a natural life.

But this rescue of the sublime is only part of Rousseau's intended achievement; and the truncating tendency of modern science is only one of the ills he seeks

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

to address. Each, in fact, is subsumed by Rousseau's larger project. What Rousseau seeks to achieve, most of all, is the restoration of human wholeness -- that is, the restoration of the savage's goodness and harmony, both internally and with respect to others. And the means to achieving this, at least in the case of the naturalistic solutions exemplified by Emile and Jean-Jacques, is to undo the severance between nature and human nature, or, to put it another way, to renaturalize human nature. (The solution exemplified by the virtuous citizen also entails the restoration of wholeness, but the citizen's wholeness comes about by an artificial replication of original wholeness; for the citizen, and only for the citizen, nature is a merely formal standard.) Establishing the naturalness of the sublime and showing how one might come to experience the sublime is but part, even if the most glorious part, of restoring man's wholeness.

The easiest way to appreciate the meaning of Rousseau's goal is to consider the problem which it purports to solve. Let us recall Rousseau's diagnosis of social man's ills. Social man, as Rousseau portrays him, is torn by inner conflict and tyrannized by excessive desire. That is to say, social man suffers from a loss of wholeness, for what are inner conflict and excessive desire if not precisely that? Inner conflict is the loss or antithesis of inner unity, which is one aspect of

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

wholeness, and excessive desire is the antithesis of the equal balance between faculty and desire, between power and will, which is the other aspect of wholeness.[4] Each of Rousseau's theoretical prescriptions aims at recovering this twofold wholeness, on the premise that only then would one be able to enjoy the sweetness of existence and maintain a benevolent disposition toward others. The promise held out by Rousseau's constructive works, even if it is a promise that Rousseau himself disavowed on practical grounds, is nothing less than that. The *Social Contract* holds out the promise of wholeness through participation in a purposeful and virtuous political community, while *Emile* and the autobiographical writings hold out variations of wholeness through a recovery of naturalness, or through the renaturalization of human nature -- or, more precisely, at least with regard to *Emile*, through the naturalization of man's second or social

---

4. Obviously Rousseau's account of human ills features other things besides these two kinds of lost wholeness. One need only think of personal dependence and untamed *amour-propre*, to name two. But personal dependence and untamed *amour-propre* are more properly thought of as *causes* of social man's "illness" rather than as the illness itself, for, although they are enormously important, one does not feel or suffer them in and of themselves. Similarly, the many unhappy symptoms and consequences of lost wholeness -- namely, the whole range of human evils from shame and envy to vanity and contempt to anxiety and hypocrisy to oppression and degradation -- are more properly thought of as just that, i.e. symptoms and consequences, rather than as the illness itself. They, too, are important, but they are all part of and therefore somewhat incomprehensible apart from the larger phenomenon of lost wholeness.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

nature.

Is this a promise that can be kept? Rousseau thought that it was, but only theoretically. Others, inspired by his writings and less pessimistic than he, would say that wholeness _could_ be recovered, although they usually revised the terms of his prescriptions, sometimes beyond all recognition. It is not difficult to interpret much of the romanticism and radicalism of the past two centuries as testimony to faith in the promise held out by Rousseau. Still others, meanwhile, have answered in the negative, arguing either that no such wholeness is possible, at least not in this life, or else that wholeness may indeed be possible, but not in the way or through the means that Rousseau suggests.[5] Can wholeness be recovered? Is a return to natural goodness even theoretically possible? In the end this is probably a question that one must answer for oneself, for at bottom it is not very different from, perhaps not at all different from, a question of faith.

---

5. One who argued the latter possibility was Nietzsche, who, while faulting Rousseau for advocating a sentimental understanding of nature, insisted that a kind of natural wholeness nevertheless is possible: "I too speak of a 'return to nature,' although it is not really a going-back but a _going-up_ -- up into a high, free, even frightful nature and naturalness, such as plays with great tasks, is _permitted_ to play with them. . . ." "_Goethe_ . . . a grand attempt to overcome the eighteenth century through a return to nature, through a going-_up_ to the naturalness of the Renaissance, a kind of self-overcoming on the part of that century. . . . What he aspired to was _totality_." See _Twilight of the Idols_, trans. R.J. Hollingdale (New York: Penguin Books, 1968), pp. 101-02.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Certainly it is a question addressed by every religion.

Still, questions of faith, if that indeed is what this one is, are not off limits to rational scrutiny. If we cannot settle the question, we might at least shed some light on it. Parts of Rousseau's system -- including key premises on which the promise of wholeness rests -- are empirical assertions and so can be tested against the findings of scientific psychology and anthropology. Rousseau's goal is not just wholeness, but recovered wholeness. The premise is that man once was (and presumably still is born) whole, or naturally good. It would therefore make sense, if we wish to assess the plausibility of Rousseau's promise, to look into whether the scientific and historic record supports or refutes that claim. If it should turn out that such wholeness as he ascribes to savage man never existed, then the plausibility of recovering wholeness will have been dealt a severe blow. If, on the other hand, a significant portion of these premises is confirmed -- and this is in fact what we shall find -- the promise of wholeness, or at least the promise of greater wholeness than most of us now enjoy, will have been saved and perhaps even revitalized. Psychology and anthropology cannot settle so profoundly philosophic a question as the plausibility of recovering natural goodness, but they can assist us in making that judgment, just as Rousseau, himself a student of science, believed

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

they could.

THE REALITY OF NATURAL GOODNESS: WHAT SCIENCE HAS TO SAY

A survey of respected developmental psychology and anthropology texts lends credence to a good portion of Rousseau's basic premises. The evidence seems to confirm, first, that in certain key respects man did indeed enjoy an original wholeness (or what Rousseau calls goodness), whether "original" is taken to refer to the infancy of the child born into civilization or to the infancy of the human race; and, second, that this wholeness was progressively lost in something like the way Rousseau describes in Part II of the _Second Discourse_. To be sure, not everything about Rousseau's account is borne out by the evidence. Much of it is called into doubt, and some of it -- most notably his assertion that man was originally (and presumably still is born) asocial -- has been rather flatly refuted.

One of the striking features of the literature is the extent to which the developmental findings of scientific psychology parallel those of anthropology -- that is, the extent to which ontogeny seems to recapitulate phylogeny. (Not that this would have surprised Rousseau: there are significant parallels between the order of Emile's development and that of the species at large,

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

notwithstanding that Emile's progress is healthy whereas that of the species was not.) In each case, a story is told which begins with a general psychological integrity and moral innocence and then proceeds to recount the dissolution of this wholeness as higher faculties, especially self-consciousness, develop. To be sure, there are important differences between an individual's infancy and the species'. It obviously would be incorrect, for example, to say that the human infant of any era has an equal balance between desires and faculties. The infant relies on outside help for the satisfaction of all his needs. That said, the infant in the cradle still does share what, for our purposes, are the most decisive characteristics of the early savage. Even if he cannot provide for himself, his needs are limited and, most important, they are sure to be met if only nature's strong impulse (i.e., maternal instinct) is not resisted -- and this is one case where nature's impulse is almost never resisted. Not only are the infant's needs wholly natural, so is the satisfaction of those needs.[6] But rather than compare the ontogenetic and phylogenetic records to each other, let us look at them individually and relate them, in

6. See SD, 121, where Rousseau depicts maternal care in the state of nature, thus making the case for the naturalness of maternal care: "The mother nursed her children at first for her own need; then, habit having endeared them to her, she nourished them afterward for their need.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

turn, to Rousseau's project. We begin with what psychology has learned about the development of the child in civilization.

Much is still disputed among developmental psychologists, but much is now beyond dispute. And within the latter category fall some highly relevant findings from researchers such as Jean Piaget (on cognitive development) and Margaret Mahler (on emotional development and the development of selfhood).7 What emerges from the researches of these and other psychologists is a portrait of the young child as whole -- that is, as having a high degree of psychic unity and a (generally) moderate level of desire. The infant, having yet to suffer either the inner dividedness or the explosion of desires that characterize civilized men and women, is innocent and psychologically intact. The infant, however, should not be regarded as the peak or perfection of happiness. Rather, normal childhood development has roughly the same shape as Rousseau's depiction of the development of the species in the _Second Discourse_. Which is to say, there is initial _upward_ movement: happiness and goodness, the real meaning of

---

7. What follows in no way purports to be exhaustive. My purpose is only to draw a few basic findings from a large and active discipline. For the details of childhood cognitive development, see _The Essential Piaget_, ed. H. Gruber and J. Voneche (New York: Basic Books, 1977). Those interested in Mahler's ideas are referred to Louise J. Kaplan's excellent and very readable _Oneness and Separateness: From Infant to Individual_ (New York: Simon & Schuster, Inc., 1978).

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

wholeness, at first increase; they decrease only later. I would suggest that the normal "civilized" four-year-old ought to be considered the ontogenetic analogue to the members of nascent or tribal society, described in the Second Discourse as "the best [state] for man."(151) The faculties of the four-year-old are more active and developed than those of the infant, just as the faculties of the members of tribal society were more active and more developed than those of man in the pure state of nature, yet the four-year-old, like the members of tribal society, has not yet suffered any kind of Fall. And so the four-year-old might fairly be said to enjoy life more, and to "exist" more, than the infant, just as, according to Rousseau, members of tribal society enjoyed life more and "existed" more than their primitive forebearers.

As for what follows this happy period, let us just note, without getting into all the details, that between the ages of four and seven, something happens -- something less than a Fall, it would seem, but something in that general direction. The child loses some of his heretofore expansive confidence and good will. Compare the following passages from a popular study of childhood development. "The typical 4-year-old," we are told,

> tends to be rather a joy. His enthusiasm, his exuberance, his willingness to go more than halfway to meet others in a spirit of fun are all extremely refreshing . . . He is basically highly positive, enthusiastic, appreciative. This makes him fun to be with, an engaging, amusing, ever-challenging friend.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

> You have to be on your toes to keep up with spirited, fanciful FOUR, but at least you have an even chance of success . . . With other children, things as a rule go rather well. FOURS enjoy each other; they appreciate the challenge that other children offer. This is an age at which children interest and admire each other most . . .8

The seven-year-old, by contrast, seems to have lost some of that good feeling, some of what Rousseau means by goodness and what I have meant by wholeness:

> More aware of and withdrawn into self . . . Seems to be in "another world" . . . Self-conscious about own body. Sensitive about exposing body. Does not like to be touched. Modest about toileting . . . Protects self by withdrawal. May be unwilling to expose knowledge, for fear of being laughed at or criticized . . . Apt to expect too much of self.9

What causes this change? Those familiar with Rousseau's diagnosis of human ills might wonder whether the "event" that occurs between ages four and seven isn't the birth of amour-propre. Amour-propre, after all, is the essential condition of the loss of original wholeness. But that cannot be the answer, at least not quite, for Rousseau suggests quite clearly that amour-propre makes its initial appearance in the typical child much earlier than the period in question. As we have seen, amour-propre ordinarily begins to stir even in infancy, and certainly it is already present in any child who engages his parents in

---

8. Louise Bates et. al., The Gesell Institute's Child from One to Six (New York: Harper and Row, 1979), pp.

9. Arnold Gesell and Frances Ilg, The Child from Five to Ten (New York: Harper and Row, 1946), pp.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

battles of will. (The "terrible two's" would seem to stem partly from the innocent desire to "change the condition of things,"10 but also, or so Rousseau suggests, from the desire to command others' wills.) But if the decisive event cannot be the *birth* of *amour-propre*, it might very well be the *development* of *amour-propre*, or *amour-propre*'s attaining critical mass.

As we saw in Chapter Four, *amour-propre*'s birth and development follow from the birth and development of self-consciousness. As self-consciousness grows, so does *amour-propre*. Now if there is a common thread uniting the distinctive characteristics of the seven-year-old, it is just that: enhanced self-consciousness. Every one of the characteristics cited from the Gesell study has to do with an enhanced sense of the separateness, and hence the vulnerability, of the self -- thus lending support to the notion that what accounts for the diminished wholeness of the seven-year-old vis-à-vis the four-year-old is *amour-propre*'s attaining fateful proportions. If the newborn is whole but only dimly awake, like man in the pure state of

---

10. "A child wants to upset everything he sees; he smashes, breaks everything he can reach. . . .

"Why is that? . . . [H]e senses within himself, so to speak, enough life to animate everything surrounding him. That he do or undo is a matter of no importance; it suffices that he change the condition of things, and every change is an action. If he seems to have more of an inclination to destroy, it is not from wickedness but because the action which gives shape is always slow and the action which destroys, being more rapid, fits his vivacity better."(*Emile* I:67)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

nature; and if the four-year-old is a little less whole (having a touch of _amour-propre_) but more joyously awake, like man during the epoch of nascent society; then the seven-year-old is considerably less whole (having now more than just a touch of _amour-propre_) and has begun to be subject to the psychic ills that attend a self which feels its separateness -- he is on his way toward the challenges of civilized adulthood. This is not to say that developmental psychology altogether bears out Rousseau's developmental scheme, but it is to say that Rousseau's most basic proposition -- that man begins whole and then, with the development of _amour-propre_, "falls" into disunity and excessive desire -- _does_ seem to be borne out by what science has to say about ontogenesis.

What about phylogenesis? Here, too, the evidence appears to bear out Rousseau -- again, not in every regard (we have yet to discuss his mistaken assumption of asociality and the consequences of that error), but certainly with regard to the basic proposition of wholeness once had and then lost. On the basis of archaeological research and various other investigatory activity, a record of the history of human consciousness has been assembled whose basic outlines correspond to Rousseau's.11 The story that is told proceeds as follows. From his earliest days (three to six million years ago) until roughly two hundred thousand years ago, primitive man's consciousness seems to

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

have been immersed in the material and natural world. That is to say, he had no sense of self. (The same seems to be true of the newborn.) This would seem to correspond to Rousseau's account of the pure state of nature. Then, during the next epoch, which lasted from roughly two hundred thousand years ago until the beginnings of farming around twelve thousand years ago, primitive man seems to have developed a sense of his own separateness, albeit very minimally. Self and world were now generally differentiated, but the boundaries between them were fluid and there still was no differentiation between mind and body; nor was there much foresight. (The same seems to be true of the next stage of the infant's development.) This

---

11. The record that has been assembled is based on circumstantial evidence; there can be no hard and fast proof in such an endeavor. Nevertheless it has achieved widespread acceptance among reputable scholars, at least with regard to the features of interest to us. It is "only" with regard to such philosophic questions as the causes and meaning of this history, and not the basic empirical facts, that argument still rages. For a nontechnical presentation of the outlines of this record, along with a partial literature survey, see Ken Wilber, _Up from Eden: A Transpersonal View of Human Evolution_ (Boulder, Colorado: Shambhala Publications, Inc., 1981). Wilber draws on (and thus illuminates the basic agreement of) figures as diverse as Jean Gebser, Ernst Cassirer, and Erich Neumann. Moreover, Wilber points out in some detail the correspondance between the phylogenetic findings of Gebser et. al. and the ontogenetic findings of a broad range of psychologists, including Piaget, Mahler, Freudians, Jungians, and contemporary ego psychologists. For more on the close parallels between the phylogeny and ontogeny of human consciousness, see Silvano Arieti, _The Intrapsychic Self: Feeling and Cognition in Health and Mental Illness_ (New York: Basic Books, Inc., 1967). The account that follows is drawn largely from Wilber.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

was the epoch of the earliest societies, which numbered perhaps twenty to thirty and whose members, not yet possessing language, knew little of hoarded property, social inequality, exploitation or war. In each of these respects this period would seem to correspond to Rousseau's account of the epoch of nascent society. Finally, with the passing of this epoch, comes the history that is more familiar to most of us -- the history that begins with the appearance of large societies sustained by agriculture and industry, and which includes complex political hierarchies, inequalities of wealth and power, exploitation, conflict, and all the other glories and ills of the human condition as we have come to know it.

The phylogenetic or historic record thus supports Rousseau in two ways. First, it seems to bear out Rousseau's contention that human beings, now so lacking in wholeness and benevolence, were once in possession of these longed-for attributes. And, second, it strongly suggests that the difference between then and now -- between prehistoric wholeness and today's fracture and imbalance -- seems to have everything to do with the acquisition of self-consciousness. Just as it does in Rousseau's telling, self-consciousness, i.e., the self's awareness of its separateness, complicates human needs even while expanding human depths and possibilities. While he was simple and limited in his mental development, whether as a species or

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

in his individual infancy, man was whole; when he acquires a certain degree of self-consciousness -- when he becomes well aware of his own separateness and can reflect on himself and think about his past and his future -- he loses his wholeness: he finds himself pulled in conflicting directions and subject to a never-ending desire for power after power, and he frets and worries over everything from his standing among his fellows to his ever-impending death. So reads the record of human development, whether ontogenetic or phylogenetic, as compiled by science, and so reads the story told by Rousseau. Again, to be sure, not everything in Rousseau's account of human development has been borne out, and some of it has been flatly contradicted. (His belief in natural asociability has been refuted both ontogenetically and phylogenetically.[12]) But the errors in his account do not refute the premise of wholeness once had and subsequently lost and so are not serious enough to subvert the theoretical plausibility of

---

12. For the phylogenetic case against asociability, see Roger Masters, "Jean-Jacques Is Alive and Well: Rousseau and Contemporary Sociobiology," Daedalus, Summer 1978, pp. 93-105. As for the ontogenetic case, it is necessarily less compelling, since research on early childhood development takes place in civilization, which, Rousseau would say, compromises its ability to say anything about what is natural for human beings. Nevertheless it is worth noting the following. Research indicates not only that small children need others for care and affection, but also that they develop identities only by separating themselves -- only by *struggling* to separate themselves -- from their parents. That is, individuality is won only through a kind of social process. See Kaplan for the full, detailed account.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

recovering our natural wholeness.[13]

The scientific record cannot speak definitively about future possibilities. Even if Rousseau's account of human development proved to be perfectly accurate, we would not know whether the promise held out by his constructive works is realistic. Nevertheless it is meaningful that the record at least does not undercut that promise, for a

---

13. Even with regard to his most serious mistake, i.e., his belief that man was originally asocial, Rousseau is not as wrong as he may appear to be. For one thing, he does not altogether deny the possibility of social interaction among early human beings. As Roger Masters notes, Rousseau does allow for the possibility of cooperation for the sake of meeting basic needs. This is evident from the following statement. "[I]t is impossible," Rousseau says, "to imagine why, in that primitive state, a man would sooner have need of another man than a monkey or a wolf of its fellow creature."(<u>SD</u>, 126) Rousseau does not deny the possibility of cooperation; he only denies that cooperation among early humans was essentially different from that among other animals. As Masters puts it, "Rousseau's rejection of sociability refers to what we call human culture rather than to what a biologist would describe as social behavior. . . . What Rousseau . . . rejects is the natural status of 'social bonds' like legal contracts and socioeconomic or political inequality. When denying that society existed in the pure state of nature, Rousseau thus does not exclude the possibility of some forms of social interaction." Thus Rousseau's insistence on natural asociability is not quite as radical as it is sometimes thought to be, and so is not quite as incorrect as it may seem. What's more, Rousseau is essentially <u>right</u> in a very important sense. Primitive man may have been social to a greater extent than Rousseau allows, but he was not sociable in a distinctively human way. He was not socially constituted. See "Jean-Jacques Is Alive and Well," pp. 99-100. (Masters also confirms our position that Rousseau was basically right about the wholeness of early man: "Rousseau's celebrated thesis of man's natural goodness can be accepted in at least one form. Early humans do not seem to have been malicious or evil." See pp. 101-102.)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

promise that is not rejected is a promise that remains plausible. And a promise that remains plausible, when it is as attractive as Rousseau's has proved to be, is a promise with enormous power and therefore one to be reckoned with. Is Rousseau's promise one that can be kept? Certainly it retains some plausibility. And that is enough to compel us to raise a final set of questions. What risks do we run in pursuing this promise? What dangers do we face, if any, in adopting Rousseau's non-teleological nature as our lodestar? And what might it cost us in terms of precluded possibilities?

THE PERILS OF ROUSSEAU'S NATURALISM -- SOME CONCLUDING REFLECTIONS

Rousseau's readers will decide for themselves -- or, more likely, will simply discover for themselves -- whether they find his vision compelling. One's basic response to his portrait of natural goodness and to the prospect of renewed wholeness is more a personal and aesthetic matter than a rational one. It was not critical reason which inspired the romantic and revolutionary fervor of those who were most deeply stirred by Rousseau, nor does it seem likely that it was critical reason which provoked the often visceral dislike of Rousseau among opponents of Romanticism and revolution. Indeed, it is hard to imagine that

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

anyone's first response to Rousseau would be based solely or even predominantly on critical reflection. Certainly Rousseau did not mean for it to be: from the first, his rhetoric was skillfully aimed at the heart. He understood that his various portraits of the good life would pass through the senses and sensibilities of his readers before reaching their rational faculties. But if critical reason has little to do with our initial response to Rousseau, it certainly can say something about the implications of his vision. It can say something about necessary trade-offs and potential dangers.

There is no moral and political vision that does not carry costs and dangers. There is no notion of the Good that does not preclude other notions of the Good, and there is no moral and political understanding that is not subject to misreading and/or abuse. Among the potentially troublesome implications of Rousseau's vision, two in particular -- or, rather, two sets of implications -- seem to me worthy of note. Each derives from Rousseau's reliance upon a non-teleological conception of nature.

I. Rousseau's Subjectivism and Its Consequences

As we have seen, nature serves as more than just a formal standard for Rousseau. It _is_ that, but it is also more than that. While all good lives meet the formal

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

standard (i.e., replicate the savage's psychic unity and equal balance between desires and faculties), those who are called natural men also have a substantive dimension to their naturalness: they not only replicate the savage's wholeness, but also develop and live according to the natural love of order that Rousseau calls conscience. The souls of Emile and Jean-Jacques are more than just formally natural. And yet if Rousseau's nature is more than a formal standard, it turns out that there is at least one way -- one troubling way -- in which it seems to act like one.

Like a merely formal standard, Rousseau's non-teleological nature allows for multiple solutions to the problem of the good life. This in itself is neither conceptually problematic nor troubling in its implications; indeed, one might see it as a major plus. What is potentially troubling, however, is that which makes this multiplicity possible. The reason Rousseau can approve equally of denatured citizenship and the naturalness of Emile is that his non-teleological standard is an essentially psychological and, therefore, subjective standard. When Rousseau endorses or condemns a way of life he does so on the basis of the state of soul that it requires or engenders. The citizen and the natural man are affirmed because they each enjoy considerable psychic integrity, which in turn allows them to experience a high

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

degree of existence and leads them to behave well toward others. And the bourgeois is condemned on the basis of the same psychological standard -- he is condemned because he lacks psychic integrity (he is internally divided and basely appetitive) and so is petty both in terms of the degree of existence he enjoys and morally. It is only because his basic standard is psychological that Rousseau can endorse such disparate versions of the good life as the citizen's, Emile's and Jean-Jacques'. Now it is possible that Rousseau's understanding of the relation between psychological state and behavior is entirely correct -- i.e., that psychic integrity does indeed always produce desirable behavior. But even if that is the case, there is something inherently difficult and perhaps also dangerous about a standard which is so subjective. What is difficult about such a subjective standard is how impractical it can be in real-life situations. What is dangerous about it is the room it opens up for bad faith.

One who would orient his behavior and his moral striving by so subjective a standard as Rousseau's may find that that standard has little to say to him about many or even most of life's difficult choices. As we noted earlier, none of Rousseau's constructive works includes a code of conduct or even a catalogue of basic virtues. What he provides instead is what might be called metamoral principles, that is, principles which, if implemented,

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

would purportedly yield good behavior. Perhaps it is unfair to fault Rousseau for this. Why should anyone be faulted for failing to say everything? Why should a moral philosopher be faulted for failing to be a moral legislator -- especially when he has never claimed to be one? But perhaps Rousseau does deserve criticism in this regard, for he encourages an ethos that is psychologically oriented rather than behaviorally oriented. That is, he encourages, if only by implication, an approach to moral life that is concerned more with what one _is_ than with what one _does_, on the understanding that the latter derives from the former. And such an approach, however true its basic understanding of the relation between character and behavior might be, may often prove inadequate and even irrelevant to moral questions immediately at hand. When one is faced with an immediate question of what to do, it will be of little use to know what it is that one should be. In the face of difficult choices, it is moral counsel, and not psychotherapy, that is most urgently needed. Moreover, and now we come to the potentially dangerous part, this psychological orientation provides an all-too-easy escape from the demands of right behavior.

An emphasis on what one is rather than on what one does makes the supposed intention of an act, rather than the act itself, the object of moral judgment, for it is intention which would seem to provide the most direct

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

reflection of what one is. And this focus, to the extent that it crowds out consideration of the effects of the act and the nature of the act itself, can easily lend itself to a kind of moral laziness or bad faith. Surely it is easier to justify questionable actions when the standard of justification is intention rather than effect and when the means of determining whether the act is justified is self-examination rather than testing the effects of an action against an objective standard. And surely this emphasis on good intentions over good effects makes it easier to excuse questionable actions, not only after the fact but also before. None of this is to say that Rousseau's non-teleological conception of nature and his consequent adoption of a psychologically oriented moral standard creates a danger where none had existed previously. Moral sophistry, whether in anticipation of a questionable act or after the act has been committed, is all too great a temptation under any moral regime. But the temptation would seem to grow greater as one enters the more lawyer-friendly court of subjective self-examination. And if we doubt that the danger exists, we have a portrait of it from Rousseau himself.

Let us briefly consider some episodes from the Confessions.14 What we find, at least in the parts of the book that precede the hero's return to nature, is a flawed being who is all too full of excuses for his bad actions.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Rousseau does not deny the wrongness of many of his actions -- he does not attempt to justify them[15] -- but he does repeatedly absolve himself of responsibility for them. He attributes them to something other than his true self, as in the case of his abandonment of his friend, Le Maitre, in the latter's hour of need. (This, he tells us, was one of those "instants in which I so little resemble myself, I might be taken for another man of a quite opposite character."(III:116)) Or he pleads good intentions, as he does with regard to placing his children in a foundling home. ("I trembled at the thought of entrusting them to a family ill brought up, to be still worse educated. The

---

14. The reader should note that although the _Confessions_ is presented as autobiography, we should be careful about criticizing Rousseau _the author_ for actions attributed to Rousseau _the character_. There is some question as to the factual accuracy of the episodes recounted. We should even be careful about criticizing Rousseau the author for what we might find objectionable in Rousseau _the narrator_, who, after all, is also one of the book's characters. Ann Hartle argues that Rousseau the author intends for us to be bothered by the attempts at self-justification by the narrator. "His 'excusing' is part of the portrait," she writes, "and Rousseau _intends_ that there be such responses [i.e. objections by his readers]. This is the way we are: excusing (ourselves) and judging (others)." See _The Modern Self in Rousseau's Confessions: A Reply to St. Augustine_ (Notre Dame, Indiana: University of Notre Dame Press, 1983), p. 31. Thus it may be that Rousseau means to illustrate the very danger that I am outlining here.

---

15. The object of his autobiography, Rousseau tells us, is "to communicate an exact knowledge of what I interiorly am and have been in every situation of my life" -- that is, to describe rather than to justify. "I am not under the least apprehension lest the reader should forget I make my confession, and be induced to believe I make my apology . . ."(VII:250-51)

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

risk of the education of the Foundling Hospital was much less."(IX:397)) Or he simply excuses bad actions on the grounds that if he hadn't committed them, someone else would have. Such is his excuse for accepting money from Madame de Warens despite knowing of her financial difficulties:

> I can swear I could have suffered all retrenchments with joy, had Mamma really benefited by the saving; but certain that what I refused myself went to knaves, I abused her indulgence to partake with them, and, like the dog which comes from the shambles, I took off a morsel from the piece I could not save.(V:194)

What is most telling in this passage is Rousseau's distinction between himself and the "knaves." Rousseau, who partakes of Madame's indulgence, is himself not a knave. Why not? Apparently because he would have <u>preferred</u> to have done otherwise. One's moral stature, it would seem, is determined not by what one does -- nor even, in this case, by one's immediate intentions -- but by one's abstract preference, for it is such preferences or wishes that best reflect one's true self. It is only on such grounds as these that Rousseau can claim, even after making all these confessions, that he is, "considering everything, the best of men."(X:496)

Rousseau's is not the only moral orientation to leave room for exculpatory sophistry. No moral code is invulnerable to bad faith. Some moral systems, however, might be more vulnerable than others. (Perhaps one of the criteria of a great moral system is the recognition of and

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

response to this danger.) And it certainly seems possible that, with its subjective basis, Rousseau's moral orientation creates more room for bad faith, more space within which the person might elude the demands of moral accountability.

Such is the most compelling criticism that might be levelled against Rousseau's moral subjectivism. But there is another criticism, based on the danger of another (albeit related) kind of bad faith. We have observed that Rousseau's moral thought concentrates much more on what one is than on what one does. If there is a single moral imperative in Rousseau's work, it is the imperative to follow nature, or to _be_ natural. This imperative takes precedence even over Rousseau's own version of the golden rule, for it is good character -- specifically, it is a natural character -- that will best ensure adherence to that or any other worthwhile rule. But how can this imperative be translated into reality? The best way, and the only way that Rousseau explicitly advises, is to adopt a more natural way of life -- to leave large cities for rustic simplicity, for example. (This and other such measures are endorsed in the _Lettres morales_, the nearest thing to a natural handbook that Rousseau ever wrote.) But it is not difficult to imagine another way in which one might attempt to realize the imperative to be natural, a way which is perhaps exemplified (again) by Rousseau

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

himself. When the subjective goal of being natural supplants adherence to objective rules or principles as the focus of one's moral striving, the danger exists that one's efforts will be chiefly aimed at feeling good, that is, feeling like a good person. One may be more concerned with impressing oneself with one's own goodness than with actually doing good.

Rousseau acknowledges something like this danger in the Letter to d'Alembert, where he criticizes theatergoers for imagining that, by virtue of having sympathized with (enacted) suffering or having felt indignation at (enacted) injustice, they have discharged their moral duty. The same people who congratulate themselves for their moral responses in the theater are apt to find a way to do the same thing in the real world. Which means either that they will be satisfied with themselves merely for having the right emotions and thus not act at all, or that they will act according to the requirements of their self-satisfaction rather than the more uncomfortable demands of the situation. The latter would be no danger at all if doing the right thing always meant doing the thing that feels best. But sometimes the right thing does not feel best. Sometimes one is faced with choosing the lesser of two evils, or with a need to exercise "tough love," neither of which is apt to appeal to those for whom clean hands and an untroubled heart are the highest moral values.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

II. The Denial of *Amour-propre*'s Naturalness and the Consequences for Our Moral Lives

We noted earlier that Rousseau's denial of original sociability is not quite as radical, and that it is therefore not quite as erroneous, as it might seem. Rousseau does allow for the possibility of cooperative interaction in the pure state of nature. He only denies that that interaction would have been in any way distinctively human, and in this he is not contradicted by the anthropological record. Rousseau's position, however, is not merely an anthropological claim; it is also a philosophic one. He not only claims that men were originally asocial, he claims that they are (therefore) *naturally* asocial. And there, in the equation of the original with the natural, lies the source of some enormously important consequences.

The immediate effect of denying the naturalness of sociability is to deny the naturalness of *amour-propre*. *Amour-propre* had no place in the soul of primitive man; therefore, it is unnatural. That is the position taken in the *Second Discourse*. In *Emile* and elsewhere, to be sure, Rousseau allows for a second level of naturalness, and at that level *amour-propre* can indeed be considered natural, at least in the sense that it has a place in the civilized

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

natural man's soul. But we have seen that that second level of naturalness is indeed secondary -- that it takes its bearings from original naturalness -- and that, in order to qualify as natural, _amour-propre_ must serve _amour de soi_. The savage is the primordial man in more ways than one. He not only preceded the civilized natural man, he also fundamentally informs him. That this is the case -- that the most perfect exemplar of naturalness had no _amour-propre_ -- is bound to have repurcussions. In short, even though Rousseau concedes that _amour-propre_ is inevitable in every civilized person, and even though he concedes that it can be the source of virtue and other good things, the fact that it is considered unnatural in the strict sense would seem to render it perpetually suspect. From the start of his career Rousseau identified _amour-propre_ as the chief source of our ills. That alone would seem to produce a cautious attitude toward it. Add to that the designation of unnatural -- in a philosophic system which holds nature to be absolutely good and everything else (i.e., man) to be rather perverse -- and _amour-propre_ becomes _extremely_ suspect, so much so that Rousseau's most impassioned moral rhetoric is reserved for warning of its evil effects.

Now to render a thing suspect -- to declare, as it were, that it is to be treated with something analogous to judicial "strict scrutiny" -- is not to condemn the thing. Indeed, Rousseau not only allows for _amour-propre_ in

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Emile's soul, he pointedly suggests that the young man _needs_ it: he needs _amour-propre_ (well governed, of course) so that he might develop virtue and nobility, and even for the sake of a more intense and successful romance. Nevertheless, rendering _amour-propre_ suspect by denying it the sanction of primary naturalness must surely have consequences. It must inevitably influence a whole range of moral stances or attitudes. And although not all of the potential consequences are troubling -- there is nothing morally deficient about Emile, and he is constructed on the understanding that _amour-propre_ is unnatural in the primary sense -- some of them are. There are at least two ways in which denying natural status to _amour-propre_ might produce unfortunate results in our moral lives. First, it can lead to the adoption of an unrealistically high moral standard, one by which most people fail most of the time, and so to a very harsh assessment of one's fellows. This in turn translates into pessimism and can also lead to misanthropy and to either intolerance or resignation. Second, denying the naturalness of _amour-propre_ can produce a constricting moral atmosphere, one in which the attempt to delay or limit _amour-propre_'s development can lead to its distortion, and in which some of _amour-propre_'s loftiest potentials are dampened.

A. A Standard Beyond Reach

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

To deny that any _amour-propre_ is natural in the primary sense, and to deny that the great majority of _amour-propre_, including all vanity, is natural even in the secondary or civil sense, is to construct a standard against which most people will fail most of the time -- and fail dismally, at that. As we saw in the preceding chapter, most feeling and behavior derives from less than ideal sources. The consequences of such a high failure rate are significant. To start with, one who holds so high a standard is apt to take a very dim view of his fellows. He is apt to condemn them rather roundly. Whether he does so with passion or with resignation will depend on his general disposition. A person with a more fiery temperament is apt to become a loud and scathing critic and is likely to earn the reputation of an angry prophet or a misanthrope (it is interesting to note that Rousseau himself has been seen as both of these things). A person with a more subdued temperament, on the other hand, is apt to manifest his disapproval of others in somber resignation. But whichever route is taken, constructive moral action is not likely to be the result: angry prophets may be morally impassioned, but unless they are able to invoke an angry God, their passion is not likely to inspire reform; and since neither the misanthrope nor the resigned man expects any good from others, neither is apt even to

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

attempt to elicit any. Nor is it clear that we should <u>want</u> constructive action to be carried out on the basis of such a standard. A standard that invalidates most of what we do and feel is an inhuman standard, at least when not tempered by compassion, and an inhuman standard is apt to produce inhumane results. Action based on such a standard is apt to be harsh. In the event that it is backed by revolutionary fervor and state power, it is apt to prove utterly pityless, somewhat (to reach for the nearest example) in the manner of Robespierre and the guillotine.

Another, related effect of holding people to an unrealistically high standard is pessimism. Although some of Rousseau's readers drew wildly romantic or revolutionary inspiration from his books, Rousseau himself was profoundly pessimistic about the moral or political improvement of his species. He was pessimistic because he knew that since people were motivated most of the time by vanity, they figured to continue to be motivated most of the time by vanity. And where vanity is the leading passion, he believed, there is, and there would continue to be, only moral blight. Thus neither virtue nor goodness nor happiness nor political freedom was likely to be extended in future years. If anything, the future figured to be even worse than the present.16

Now there is no way to prove that Rousseau's estimation of the moral quality of modern men was wrong.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

We cannot prove either that his contemporaries were better than he believed them to be or that we, their descendants, are morally better than he foretold. But it is possible to establish that much of Rousseau's pessimism, insofar as it was expressed in specific, empirically verifiable predictions, was unjustified. Rousseau was simply wrong, for example, in predicting that patriotism could not exist in large and/or undemocratic states (this was refuted by the explosion of nationalism in the nineteenth and twentieth centuries) and in his more general prediction that Europe would see a slide into poverty, despotism and susceptibility to conquest (this has been demonstrably refuted by the West's extraordinary prosperity and considerable political success).[17] And while these errors may prove nothing more than that Rousseau misread the future in certain respects, it may be that they betray a deeper error, an error in his philosophic system.

Rousseau's pessimism seems to have derived from a

---

16. Preparing to recount the history of the human species, Rousseau has this to say: "There is, I feel, an age at which the individual man would want to stop: you will seek the age at which you would desire your species had stopped. Discontented with your present state for reasons that foretell even greater discontents for your unhappy posterity, perhaps you would want to be able to go backward in time. This sentiment must be the eulogy of your first ancestors, the criticism of your contemporaries, and the dread of those who will have the unhappiness to live after you."(SD, 104; emphasis added)

---

17. For more on Rousseau's pessimism and its refutation by subsequent history, see Melzer, pp. 265-71 and 288-90.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

combination of two beliefs: first, that most of what most people do is, and figures to continue to be, motivated by _amour-propre_; and, second, that the character of most people's _amour-propre_ is rather bad and so precludes social progress. If Rousseau's pessimism was demonstrably unjustified, and it was, then the error must lie in one of these beliefs. Which one? Probably not the first: it is difficult to argue with Rousseau's estimation of the predominance of _amour-propre_, either in his time or in ours. It is difficult to contest that most of what most people do is motivated, at least in significant part, by the desire for recognition. Indeed, it is difficult to dispute that what Rousseau calls vanity figures largely among most people's motives, though perhaps not as largely as Rousseau suggests. His error, therefore, must lie in the second belief, the belief that most people's _amour-propre_ is of such bad character that no social improvement can be expected. _If Rousseau underestimated the political potential of the modern world it is because he overestimated the evil effects of our amour-propre_. There is no reason to suppose that human nature is any better than it was in the eighteenth century or that we educate _amour-propre_ very differently than it was educated then, and we are certainly no less interdependent today than people were then -- that is to say, our _amour-propre_ is probably of much the same quality as the _amour-propre_

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Rousseau observed in his contemporaries -- yet somehow we enjoy political and economic successes that Rousseau thought could not be had under those circumstances.

Now, to take the inquiry a step further, if Rousseau was wrong about the necessary implications of amour-propre, it may be that he also misjudged the character of amour-propre as it is manifest in most people. Perhaps, for example, he overestimated the ratio of vanity to pride in most people's souls. True, it is not difficult to find vanity in most people, but perhaps, as Adam Smith suggests, vanity is often accompanied by pride.18 Or perhaps he simply overstated the evil of vanity. Undoubtedly vanity, as Rousseau defines it, is a vice. And undoubtedly it is capable of the greatest evils. But perhaps it is not without a redeeming feature, just as hypocrisy, vanity's close cousin (each seeks to exploit the distinction between being and seeming), is not without a redeeming feature. Like hypocrisy, vanity can be seen as a tribute paid to virtue. But in fact vanity's tribute to virtue is greater than hypocrisy's because it is, or at least can be, more sincere. Hypocrisy is the way of the cynic, who pays tribute to virtue merely for personal gain. Vanity, on the

---

18. Smith alerts us to the possibility that vanity and pride are not mutually exclusive, that they can coexist in the same soul. "The proud man is often vain," he writes, "and the vain man is often proud." See The Theory of Moral Sentiments, Part VI, Section iii, paragraph 33 (New York: Oxford University Press, 1976), pp. 259.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

other hand, often reflects a person's sincere desire not just for praise but for praiseworthiness as well. An undeserving person who seeks praise might well wish that he deserved it -- he might very well understand that deserved praise is better and more meaningful than undeserved praise -- in which case vanity would seem more a weakness than a calculated evil. Such vanity is the tribute paid to virtue by the would-be virtuous person. That is why vanity can sometimes seem innocent and why it can actually presage virtue. Many who settle for undeserved praise would rather deserve it, and some of them will end up doing just that, much as the child who plays at being a hero sometimes goes on to become one.

If Rousseau does misjudge the character and effects of _amour-propre_ as it is manifest in most people, as now seems possible, why does he do so? Some might argue that his error reflects merely a disposition to find fault, a disposition arising either from natural temperament or harsh personal experience or a misanthropic spirit. None of these explanations would be fair, however, nor need we even look for personal explanations. The explanation, rather, may lie among the basic premises of Rousseau's system. There is a dualism underlying Rousseau's philosophy: that which is natural is wholly good, that which is unnatural or estranged from nature is bad. ("Everything is good as it leaves the hands of the Author

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

of things; everything degenerates in the hands of man."(_Emile_ I:37)) _Amour-propre_, as it manifests itself in most people, falls into the latter category; it is estranged from nature. Therefore it is bad, and therefore we, in whom it reigns, are bad. And so Rousseau sees little potential for good, and much for evil, in us.

Now if Rousseau was wrong in the ways I have suggested -- if he was erroneously pessimistic; and if this pessimism reflected an overestimation of _amour-propre_'s evil effects; and if the overestimation of _amour-propre_'s evil effects reflected an overly grim assessment of the character of most people's _amour-propre_, i.e., if most people's _amour-propre_ is better than Rousseau thought -- then he must have been wrong in one more way. And herein must lie his most basic error. Either Rousseau was wrong to believe that that which is unnatural must be wholly bad, or else most people's _amour-propre_ is _not_ unnatural, or at least not _as_ unnatural, as he thought. Of the two possibilities, the first would be more difficult to establish: the goodness of nature and the badness of unnaturalness could always be maintained by simply designating all good things natural and all bad things unnatural. The second possibility, on the other hand, is not so impossible to argue. And in fact there is a certain amount of suggestive empirical evidence for the proposition that _amour-propre_ is not unnatural.19 But it is not in empirical evidence that we we will find

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

the most compelling argument against _amour-propre_'s supposed unnaturalness. The most compelling argument of all, from the perspective of political philosophy, is neither socio-biological nor anthropological but rather moral and political: denying _amour-propre_ natural status has serious and troubling consequences, of which an unrealistic standard of behavior and a resulting pessimism are only the first.

B. The Risk of Delegitimating Longing and Aspiration

The immediate consequence of considering all _amour-propre_ unnatural in the strict sense and most _amour-propre_ unnatural in any sense is to render _amour-propre_ as such suspect. Even if some _amour-propre_ is endorsed and even celebrated, as a practical matter it is enormously difficult to know whether particular instances of _amour-propre_ fall into the good category or the bad.20 And the consequence of this difficulty is extreme caution regarding _amour-propre_. Rousseau's primary emphasis is on discouraging bad varieties of _amour-propre_ rather than encouraging good varieties. Recall the litany of urgent warnings against foresight, reading, imagination and other things that can awaken _amour-propre_ too early in the life of the child and thus ruin his character. Recall, too, the singular harshness of the tutor's response to Emile's first

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

display of vanity, and the severe warnings against the danger of excessive pride even in early manhood.21 As we observed in Chapter One, the negative component of the good life is given priority by Rousseau.

Nor is it only amour-propre as such that is rendered suspect. All manner of passions and strivings that are associated with or are expressions of amour-propre also become suspect and are treated with cold suspicion if not with burning anger. And the greater the magnitude of the amour-propre they express, the greater the caution with which Rousseau regards them. It is as if amour-propre is a

---

19. It turns out that something akin to amour-propre can be found among certain animals. Certain animal species, especially social vertebrates, exhibit territoriality as well as a kind of natural deference in recognition of social hierarchies or "pecking orders." See Masters, The Political Philosophy of Rousseau, p. 431; Melzer, p. 51, n. 3; and George Maclay and Humphrey Knipe, The Dominant Man (New York: Dell Publishing, 1972).

---

20. The theoretical distinction between good and bad amour-propre is one thing, making a practical judgment of so subjective a thing is another -- especially if, as Smith suggests, the good and bad versions are often intermingled in the same instances. See note 18, above. Also see note 22, below, for more on the difficulty of making the practical judgment.

---

21. Regarding the warnings against foresight, reading and imagination, see Chapter One, pages 318-20, above. For the story of Emile's first display of vanity and the humiliation that the tutor arranges in response to it, see Emile III:173-75. ("How many mortifying consequences are attracted by the first movement of vanity! Young master, spy out this first movement with care. If you know thus how to make humiliation and disgrace arise from it, be sure that a second movement will not come for a long time."(175)) And regarding the danger of excessive pride even in one who has been as wholesomely educated as Emile, see Chapter Five, pages 318-20, above.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

potent drug, one which can do great good but which is also highly addictive and highly destructive when abused. Naturally all forms of such a drug are to be regarded with caution. And the most extreme caution is to be directed toward the purest forms of the drug -- which means, in the case of _amour-propre_, toward longing and aspiration.

Rousseau of course does not simply condemn longing and aspiration. Indeed, he often celebrates them. The whole charm of Emile as a young man is his innocent but intense longing for his beloved, a longing which is even suffused with religious passion. And Rousseau speaks wistfully of the many moments of intense longing, and he speaks proudly of the many instances of noble aspiration, that have marked his own life. But if he agrees that longing and aspiration are the highest expressions of humanity, he also sees them as its most dangerous expressions. And, as with _amour-propre_ generally, it is the danger of longing and aspiration, more than their promise, that seems to determine Rousseau's approach to them. Everything that is true of Rousseau's general stance toward _amour-propre_ is especially true, intensely true, of his approach to longing and aspiration. Just as caution wins out in his stance toward _amour-propre_, so extreme caution wins out in his approach to longing and aspiration. The reasons for this caution are not unfamiliar to us. First, although there are both good and bad varieties of longing and aspiration,

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

it is very difficult as a practical matter to know which kind one is presented with in a particular instance. This we have already discussed.22 And, in any event, the best thing that one can do to encourage good varieties of longing and aspiration is to discourage the bad ones: encourage the good without preventing the bad and you will end up with bad, as the dismal record of traditional moral education attests; prevent the bad, however, and you will have gone a long way toward promoting the good. Thus the top priority of a moral education must be to prevent the bad. The question, of course, is whether these reasons are valid. If they are, Rousseau's caution is eminently justified. But if they are not -- if he is wrong to assume that a cautious approach toward longing and aspiration is the way to discourage the bad versions and encourage the good ones -- then a good part of his natural education is rendered highly questionable.

Rousseau is very careful and specific in his injunctions regarding longing and aspiration. Rather than comdemn them in blanket terms (as he sometimes condemns _amour-propre_23), he merely delimits their permissible content. The limits he prescribes, moreover, would seem to be entirely unobjectionable. We are advised -- and Emile is advised -- to respect the boundaries that our humanity has imposed on us. Who could argue with that? Let us look at two such pieces of advice from _Emile_, the first of which

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

was given directly to the young man, the second directly to us.

> "I have only one precept to give you, and it comprehends all the others. Be a man. Restrain your heart within the limits of your condition. Study and know these limits. However narrow they may be, a man is not unhappy as long as he closes himself up within them. He is unhappy only when he wants to go out beyond them."(V:445-46)

> O man, draw your existence up within yourself, and you will no longer be miserable. Remain in the place which nature assigns to you in the chain of being. Nothing will be able to make you leave it. Do not rebel against the hard law of necessity; and do not exhaust your strength by your will to resist that law -- strength which heaven gave you not for extending or prolonging your existence but only for preserving it as heaven pleases and for as long as heaven pleases. You freedom and your power extend only as far as your natural strength, and not beyond. All the rest is only slavery, illusion, and deception.(II:83)

Underlying the limits that Rousseau prescribes for longing and aspiration is the belief that strength, happiness and goodness depend upon them. These goods are easily lost by dint of overreaching, and most especially by the desire to be something other than what one is. Whether one's desire is to be another, more fortunate human being

---

22. This practical difficulty is a result of the subjective nature of Rousseau's standard. Thus his cautious approach to longing and aspiration derives not only from the denial of natural status to _amour-propre_, but also from the subjectivism discussed above. The connection between the subjective nature of Rousseau's standard and the resulting caution toward aspiration is discussed in Chapter One, pages 66-68, above.

---

23. As we saw in the previous chapter, his apparent blanket condemnations of _amour-propre_ are deliberate overstatements for the sake of rhetorical effect. See pages 293-94, above.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

or to be more than a human being, the result is weakness, unhappiness and vice. If Emile "just once prefers to be someone other than himself," Rousseau warns, " -- were this other Socrates, were it Cato -- everything has failed. He who begins to become alien to himself does not take long to forget himself entirely."(IV:243) And if wanting to be one of those excellent men is destructive, the desire to be more than human is even more so: "how much it is to be feared that by dint of trying to raise ourselves above our nature, we may relapse beneath it."(Bordes, 113-14) This is one of the chief lessons Emile derives from his study of history: "He [Emile] will be afflicted at seeing his brothers tear one another apart for the sake of dreams and turn into ferocious animals because they do not know how to be satisfied with being men."(IV:242) "Be a man" would seem to express the appropriate limit of legitimate aspiration. Anything higher is apt to end in misery and degradation. And in any case, the goal is itself a high one. To "be a man" means to be an Emile, with all the virtues and fine feeling -- with all the wholeness -- that the young man ultimately achieves. It does not mean what is usually meant by the phrase, "only human." And drawing one's "existence up within [one]self," far from meaning egocentrism, is the first and most important step toward reaching that goal.

But are these limits really as benign as they sound?

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Certainly some of them are. It would be ludicrous to argue against respecting "the limits of [our] condition" or to suggest that we should "rebel against the hard law of necessity." But not all of Rousseau's advice is so obviously salutary. His admonition against emulating others, for example -- the basis of his excluding books from Emile's early childhood -- flies in the face of traditional principles of education, as Rousseau well knows. And the most basic of all his governing principles, the principle that it is poisonous to a natural education for a child to want to be more than he is -- that it is poisonous for <u>anyone</u> to want to be more than he is -- is also questionable. Indeed, Rousseau's principle contradicts the intuitive belief of many who share his desire to encourage the right kind of longing and aspiration. Many of us have a deep-seated sense that the desire to be more than one is is both natural and valuable, and that a certain dissatisfaction with oneself is one of the surest prods to nobility -- and that, consequently, to discourage this desire would be to risk moral and psychological distortion. Rousseau of course would consider this deep-seated sense an ill-founded prejudice, and he might in fact be right. But a prejudice as venerable as this one, which has roots in the founding documents of Western religion and philosophy, at least deserves a hearing.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Rousseau's concern with preventing the wrong kinds of longing and aspiration is great, but no greater than that which finds expression in countless other sources, beginning with the Bible. From Genesis, wherein man and woman are enjoined from eating a certain fruit lest they become "as God," on through the books of the Prophets and beyond, human beings are commanded to walk humbly with God -- they are told to respect the limits of their condition. Not only self-deification, but arrogance of any dimension is forbidden. But even as the Bible condemns one version of ontological aspiration (i.e., the aspiration to be more than one is, or to reach a higher level of being), it actually commands another. Men and women are told that they have been created in God's image, and that they *should* be "as God." "You shall be holy," says God to his people through Moses, "*for I, the Lord your God, am holy*." (Leviticus 19:2) Nor is it only the Bible that distinguishes among different versions of ontological aspiration. We need only think of Plato, who recognizes that the difference between one version of this desire and another is the difference between the worst of men and the best. The tyrant is a product of the desire to be godlike, but so is the philosopher.24 In words not so different from those of Leviticus, Plato's Socrates advises that "we ought to fly away from earth to heaven as quickly as we can; and to fly away is to become like God, as far as this

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

is possible; and to become like him, is to become holy, just, and wise."(Theaetetus, 176) Thus do the two fonts of Western culture dispute Rousseau's blanket condemnation of the desire to be more than one is.

It might seem at first that the difference between these ancient sources and Rousseau is largely semantic. The meaning of the biblical and Socratic imperative to be godlike seems not very different from the meaning of Rousseau's own imperative, "be a man." Emile, after all, who exemplifies that imperative, is just and wise and even holy, at least in the sense that one supposes Rousseau might use the term. But the semantic difference reflects a fundamental difference of outlook between the ancient approaches and Rousseau's. Even if the heights occupied by Emile (or Jean-Jacques) are as elevated as those occupied by the biblical and Socratic ideals -- even if "to be a man" as Rousseau intends it is as high a thing as what the Bible or Plato means by being godlike -- there is a world of difference between Rousseau's understanding of how we might ascend those heights and the biblical and classical understandings. For the writers of the Bible and for

---

24. One of the major themes of the Republic is the psychological kinship between the tyrant and the philosopher. As far apart as they are -- and, morally, they are as far apart as any two individuals can be -- they are both exemplars of an intense eros, which is why the young, potential philosopher (a Glaucon) is also a potential tyrant and may find himself drawn equally to these opposite poles.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Plato, and for all who belong to either or both of the traditions they founded, one of the essential requirements of scaling the heights is to *want* to be more than one is. One must want to transcend the all-too-human tendencies toward complacency and compromise. One's aspiration must partake of a super-human dimension. Without that, one is doomed never to transcend the bad aspects of our nature. (Here we see the source of the disagreement between Rousseau and those other traditions. For Rousseau, there is no need to transcend any of our natural tendencies because there *are* no bad aspects to our nature.)

To want to be "as God" in the wrong way, in an egocentric way, is the greatest of evils, or at least the cause of them, for both the biblical and the classical traditions. But to have no transcendent aspiration, to rest content with being "like the nations," is not much better. Indeed, the latter may be no better and even no different in the end from the former: they who do not have the desire to be godlike (or godly) in a good way may in the end fall prey to the desire to be godlike in a bad way. To put it in religious terms, those who do not aspire to godliness will be inclined to idolatry, and especially to self-deification. Or, to put it in the terms of Socratic philosophy, eros which is not educated to pursue the Good risks being seduced by false goods, and the most erotic and potentially philosophic individuals are apt to become the

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

most dangerously tyrannical. It may well be, in other words, that the basic choice for human beings, and especially for the greatest human beings, is not *whether* to seek to be more than one is but rather *how* to seek to be more than one is.

Rousseau not only considers the desire to be more than one is dangerous, he also considers it unnatural and hence avoidable, at least in principle. Others, however, might look around and come to a different conclusion. We notice, for example, that children especially, but not only children, frequently exhibit this desire by emulating those whom they admire. And even when emulation is muted, the aspiration to be someone or something more than one is is frequently the predominant theme of our thoughts, so much so that such aspiration would seem to have a presumptive claim to inevitability and even to naturalness. This is not an insignificant issue. The question of whether it is natural for people to be dissatisfied with the limits of humanity is of decisive practical importance. If in fact it *is* natural -- if, in the words of a recent philosopher, man naturally "experiences an ontological privation"24 -- then to overlook this dissatisfaction would be to risk real moral and spiritual damage. Emile's tutor makes sure that the desire to be more than he is is never awakened. But if *Emile* should prove unrealistic in this regard -- if this desire is in fact inevitable -- then what we need is a

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

principle by which to govern it, which is something Rousseau does not offer. Without such a principle, this most basic and consequential of aspirations would go uneducated, leaving it either unsatisfied or ill-directed, or both. There is a considerable irony in this. One of Rousseau's fundamental criticisms of liberal theory is that it does not take adequate account of *amour-propre* -- that, in trying to discourage fanaticism and vainglory, it neglects to educate this most stubbornly important part of social man's nature, leaving it to sour into petty vanity. But if Rousseau is wrong in assuming that the aspiration to be more than one is is simply bad and avoidable, then he has exposed himself to a similar criticism. He, too, might be faulted, if not for neglecting to educate the whole of *amour-propre*, at least with neglecting to educate a major part of it.

It is ironic and perhaps a little unfair to conclude our inquiry on this note. Far from wanting to discourage

---

24. The philosopher is Walter Kaufmann. The culminating sections of his *Critique of Religion and Philosophy* are a meditation on this theme and the central place it has occupied in the best of religion and philosophy. In Section 98, entitled, "Man's Ontological Interest," Kaufmann argues that, in addition to physiological and psychological needs, "Man also experiences an *ontological* privation, whether he is aware of it or not: he needs to rise above that whole level of being which is defined by his psychological and physiological needs and their satisfaction; he needs to love and create." (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1978), p. 423.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

longing and aspiration, after all, Rousseau sought to validate and even inspire them. One of his major purposes, as we have seen, was to find a natural basis for the sublime so that he might rescue it from the spiritual scythe of modern philosophy. Where other political philosophers seemed to want to bank the flames of grand passion and to replace them with smaller and more manageable fires, Rousseau sought to show that a soul which burns bright need not be destructive, so long as its fire is kindled properly. Emile's is one such soul: his love for Sophie is a magnificent passion but also a noble and orderly one. And Jean-Jacques' is another: although at his peak he transcends desire, his reveries seem to me a kind of consummation nonetheless; and they certainly have inspired longing in many readers. It is not for nothing that Rousseau is looked upon as a founder of Romanticism. The question we are left to consider, though, is whether this first purpose wasn't at least partially subverted by the overzealous pursuit of a second and related purpose. In his effort to instruct us as to the good governance of _amour-propre_, Rousseau delegitimated much longing and aspiration. The question is whether in doing so he didn't deprive the soul of the very fuel that powers its quest for the sublime.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

REFERENCES

Arieti, Silvano. The Intrapsychic Self: Feeling and Cognition in Health and Mental Illness. New York: Basic Books, 1967.

Aristotle, Nichomachean Ethics. Trans. Martin Ostwald. Indianapolis: Bobbs-Merrill Library of liberal Arts, 1962.

________. The Politics. Trans. Carnes Lord. Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1984.

Bacon, Francis. "Preface to Magna Instauratio. In Instauratio Magna with New Atlantis, ed. A.B. Gough. Oxford: Blackwell, 1915.

Bates, Louise et. al. The Gesell Institute's Child from One to Six. New York: Harper and Row, 1979.

Belloc, Hillaire. The French Revolution. London: Oxford University Press, 1911.

Bloom, Allan. "Introduction." In Jean-Jacques Rousseau, Emile, or on Education, trans. Bloom. New York: Basic Books, 1979.

________. Love and Friendship. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1993.

Blum, Carol. Rousseau and the Republic of Virtue. Ithaca, New York: Cornell University Press, 1986.

Burke, Edmund. Reflections on the Revoluton in France. London: J.M. Dent, 1910.

Cameron, David. The Social Thought of Rousseau and Burke. London: Weidenfeld and Nicolson, 1973.

Cantor, Paul A. "The Metaphysics of Botany: Rousseau and the New Criticism of Plants," Southwestern Review 70 (1985):

Cassirer, Ernst. The Question of Jean Jacques Rousseau. Ed. and trans. Peter Gay. Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1954.

________. Rousseau, Kant and Goethe. Trans. James Gutmann, Paul Oskar Kristeller and John Herman Randall, Jr. New York: Harper & Row, 1963.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Chapman, John W. Rousseau: Totalitarian or Liberal? New York: AMS Press, 1956.

Charvet, John. "Individual Identity and Social Consciousness in Rousseau's Philosophy." In Hobbes and Rousseau: A Collection of Critical Essays, ed. Maurice Cranston and Richard S. Peters. Garden City, New York: Doubleday, 1972.

________. The Social Problem in the Philosophy of Rousseau. New York: Cambridge University Press, 1974.

Cobban, Alfred. Rousseau and the Modern State. London: Allen Unwin, 1934.

Cranston, Maurice. The Noble Savage: Jean-Jacques Rousseau, 1754-1762. Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1991.

Crocker, Lester G. Rousseau's Social Contract: An Interpretive Essay. Cleveland: Case Western Reserve University Press, 1968.

Cropsey, Joseph. Political Philosophy and the Issues of Politics. Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1977.

Dent, N.J.H. A Rousseau Dictionary. Cambridge, Massachusetts: Blackwell Publishers, 1992.

________. Rousseau: An Introduction to his Psychological, Social and Political Theory. New York: Basil Blackwell, Inc., 1988.

Derathe, Robert. Le Rationalisme de Jean-Jacques Rousseau. Paris: Presses Universitaires de France, 1948.

Dodge, Guy H., ed. Jean-Jacques Rousseau: Authoritarian Libertarian? Lexington, Massachusetts: D.C. Heath and Company, 1971.

Ellenburg, Stephen. Rousseau's Political Philosophy: An Interpretation from Within. Ithaca, New York: Cornell University Press, 1976.

Freud, Sigmund. Civilization and Its Discontents. Ed. and trans. James Strachey. New York: W.W. Norton and Company, 1961.

Fukuyama, Francis. The End of History and the Last Man. New York: Avon Books, 1992.

Gesell, Arnold and Frances Ilg. The Child from Five to Ten.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

New York: Harper & Row, 1946.

Goldschmidt, Victor. Anthropologie et politique. Paris: Librairie Philosophique J. Urin, 1974.

Gossman, Lionel. "Time and History in Rousseau," Studies on Voltaire and the Eighteenth Century 30 (1964): 311-49.

Gourevitch, Victor. "Rousseau's Pure State of Nature," Interpretation 16, 1 (1988): 23-59.

Grant, Ruth W. Hypocrisy and Idealism: Machiavelli, Rousseau and Modern Politics (Forthcoming from the University of Chicago Press.)

Grimsley, Ronald. The Philosophy of Rousseau. London, Oxford University Press, 1973.

________. "Rousseau and His Reader: The Technique of Persuasion in Emile." In Rousseau After 200 Years: Proceedings of the Cambridge Bicentennial Colloquium, ed. R.A. Leigh. New York: Cambridge University Press, 1982.

________. "Rousseau and the Problem of Happiness." In Hobbes and Rousseau: A Collection of Critical Essays, ed. Maurice Cranston and Richard S. Peters. Garden City, New York: Doubleday, 1972.

Gurvitch, Georges. L'idee du droit social. Notion et système du droit social. Histoire doctrinal depuis le XVIIe siècle jusqua'a la fin du XIXe siècle. Paris: Libraire du Receuil Sirey, 1932.

Hartle, Ann. The Modern Self in Rousseau's Confessions: A Reply to St. Augustine. Notre Dame, Indiana: University of Notre Dame Press, 1983.

Hegel, G.W.F. Hegel's Phenomenology of Spirit. Trans. A.V. Miller. New York: Oxford University Press, 1977.

Hendel, Charles W. Jean-Jacques Rousseau: Moralist. 2 vols. Indianapolis: Bobbs-Merrill, 1934.

Hobbes, Thomas. "Epistle to the Reader." In The English Works of Thomas Hobbes, ed. Sir William Molesworth. 11 vols. London, 1839-45.

________. Leviathan. Indianapolis: Bobbs-Merrill Publishing, 1958.

Horowitz, Asher. Rousseau, Nature, and History. Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 1987.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Kaplan, Louise J. Oneness and Separateness: From Infant to Individual. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1978.

Kass, Leon. The Hungry Soul: Eating and the Perfecting of Our Nature. New York: The Free Press, 1994.

Kaufmann, Walter. Critique of Religion and Philosophy. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1958.

________. Nietzsche: Philosopher, Psychologist, Antichrist. Fourth edition. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1974.

Kelly, Christopher. Rousseau's Exemplary Life: The Confessions as Political Philosophy. Ithaca, New York: Cornell University Press, 1987.

Kelly, Christopher and Roger D. Masters. "Introduction." In The Collected Writings of Rousseau, ed. Masters and Kelly, vol. 1. Hanover, New Hampshire: University Press of New England, 1990.

Kojève, Alexandre. Introduction to the Reading of Hegel. New York: Basic Books, 1969.

Levine, Andrew. The Politics of Autonomy: A Kantian Reading of Rousseau's Social Contract. Amherst: The University of Massachusetts Press, 1976.

Locke, John. "Second Treatise of Government." In Two Treatises of Government, ed. Peter Laslett. New York: New American Library, 1960.

MacAdam, J.I. "The Discourse on Inequality and the Social Contract." Philosophy 50 (1975):

Machiavelli, Niccolò. The Prince. Trans. George Bull. New York: Penguin Books, 1961.

Maclay, George and Humphrey Knipe. The Dominant Man. New York: Dell Publishing, 1972.

Mason, John Hope, ed. The Indispensable Rousseau. New York: Quartet Books, 1979.

Masson, Pierre-Maurice. La religion de J.-J. Rousseau. 3 vols. Paris: Plon, 1916.

Maine, Henry Sumner. Ancient Law. London: Everyman's Library, J.M. Dent, 1917.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Masters, Roger D. "Jean-Jacques is Alive and Well: Rousseau and Contemporary Sociobiology." Daedalus 107, 3 (Summer 1978): 93-105.

________. The Political Philosophy of Rousseau. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1968.

Melzer, Arthur. The Natural Goodness of Man: On the System of Rousseau's Thought. Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1990.

Neumann, Erich. "Mystical Man." In The Mystic Vision: Papers from the Eranos Yearbooks, ed. Joseph Campbell. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1968.

Nietzsche, Friedrich. Twilight of the Idols. Trans. R.J. Hollingdale. New York: Penguin Books, 1968.

Osborn, Annie. Rousseau and Burke. New York: Russell & Russell, 1940.

Piaget, Jean. The Essential Piaget. Ed. H. Gruber and J. Voneche. New York: Basic Books, 1977.

Pinchois, Claude and Rene Pintard, eds. Jean-Jacques entre Socrate et Caton. Paris: Jose Corti, 1972.

Plamenatz, John. Man and Society. 2 vols. London: Longman Group, Limited, 1963.

Plato. "Gorgias." In Collected Dialogues, ed. Edith Hamilton and Huntington Cairns. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1961.

________. The Republic of Plato. Trans. Allan Bloom. New York: Basic Books, 1968.

________. Symposium. Trans. Alexander Nehamas and Paul Woodruff. Indianapolis: Hackett Publishing Company, 1989.

________. "Theaetetus." In Collected Dialogues, ed. Edith Hamilton and Huntington Cairns. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1961.

Plattner, Marc F. Rousseau's State of Nature: An Interpretation of the Discourse on Inequality. DeKalb: Northern Illinois University Press, 1979.

Poulet, Georges. "Le Sentiment de l'existence et le repos." In Reappraisals of Rousseau, ed. Simon Harvey et. al. Manchester: Manchester University Press, 1980.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Riesman, David. The Lonely Crowd. New Haven: Yale University Press, 1950.

Riley, Patrick. The General Will Before Rousseau: The Transformation of the Divine into the Civic. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1986.

Rousseau, Jean-Jacques. The Confessions of Jean-Jacques Rousseau. Trans. A.S.B. Glover. New York: The Heritage Press, 1955.

________. Constitutional Project for Corsica. In Political Writings, ed. and trans. Frederick Watkins. Madison: The University of Wisconsin Press, 1986.

________. Correspondence generale de J.J. Rousseau. Ed. Th. Dufour and P.P. Plan. 24 vols. Paris: Armand Colin, 1924-34.

________. "Discourse on the Origin of Inequality." In The First and Second Discourses, ed. Roger D. Masters, trans. Roger D. and Judith R. Masters. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1964.

________. "Discourse on Political Economy." In On the Social Contract with Geneva Manuscript and Political Economy, ed. Roger D. Masters, trans. Judith R. Masters. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1968.

________. "Discourse on the Sciences and the Arts." In The First and Second Discourses, ed. Roger D. Masters, trans. Roger D. and Judith R. Masters. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1964.

________. Emile, or on Education. Trans. Allan Bloom. New York: Basic Books, 1979.

________. "Essay on the Origin of Languages." In The First and Second Discourses Together with the Replies to Critics and Essay on the Origin of Languages, ed. and trans. Victor Gourevitch. New York: Harper & Row, 1986.

________. "Fragments politiques." In Oeuvres complètes. 4 vols; published under the direction of Bernard Gagnebin and Marcel Raymond. Paris: Gallimard, Bibliothèque de la Pleiade, 1959-69.

________. "Jean-Jacques Rousseau citoyen de Genève à Christophe de Beaumont, archeveque de Paris. In Oeuvres complètes. 4 vols.; published under the direction of Bernard Gagnebin and Marcel Raymond. Paris: Gallimard, Bibliothèque de la Pleiade, 1959-69.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

________. "Last Reply by J.-J. Rousseau of Geneva." In The First and Second Discourses Together with the Replies to Critics and Essay on the Origin of Languages, ed. and trans. Victor Gourevitch. New York: Harper & Row, 1986.

________. "Letter to M. d"Alembert on the Theater." In Politics and the Arts, trans. Allan Bloom. Ithaca, New York: Cornell University Press, Agora Editions, 1968.

________. "Lettres morales." In Oeuvres complètes. 4 vols; published under the direction of Bernard Gagnebin and Marcel Raymond. Paris: Gallimard, Bibliothèque de la Pleiade, 1959-69.

________. La Nouvelle Heloise. Julie, or the New Eloise. Trans. Judith H. McDowell. University Park: The Pennsylvania State University Press, 1968.

________. Oeuvres complètes. 4 vols; published under the direction of Bernard Gagnebin and Marcel Raymond. Paris: Gallimard, Bibliothèque de la Pleiade, 1959-69.

________. "Preface to Narcissus." In The First and Second Discourses with the Replies to Critics and Essay on the Origin of Languages, ed. and trans. Victor Gourevitch. New York: Harper & Row, 1990.

________. "Preface of a Second Letter to Bordes." In The First and Second Discourses with the Replies to Critics and Essay on the Origin of Languages, ed. and trans. Victor Gourevitch. New York: Harper & Row, 1990.

________. Reveries of the Solitary Walker. Trans. Charles E. Butterworth. Indianapolis: Hackett Publishing Company, 1992.

________. "Rousseau, Judge of Jean-Jacques: Dialogues." In The Collected Writings of Rousseau, ed. Roger D. Masters and Christopher Kelly, trans. Judith R. Bush, Christopher Kelly and Roger D. Masters. 7 vols. Hanover, New Hampshire: University Press of New England, 1990-.

________. "On the Social Contract." In On the Social Contract with Geneva Manuscript and Political Economy, ed. Roger D. Masters, trans. Judith R. Masters. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1978.

Salkever, Stephen G. "Rousseau & The Concept of Happiness." Politics 11 (Fall 1978): 27-45.

Santas, Gerasimos. Plato and Freud: Two Theories of Love.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

New York: Basil Blackwell, 1988.

Schama, Simon. Citizens: A Chronicle of the French Revolution. New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1989.

Schwartz, Joel. The Sexual Politics of Jean-Jacques Rousseau. Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1984.

Scott, John T. "The Theodicy of the Second Discourse: The 'Pure State of Nature' and Rousseau's Political Thought." American Political Science Review 86, 3 (September 1992): 696-711.

Shklar, Judith. Men and Citizens: A Study of Rousseau's Social Theory. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1969.

Skillen, Anthony. "Rousseau and the Fall of Social Man." Philosophy 60 (1985): 105-21.

Smith, Adam. The Theory of Moral Sentiments. New York: Oxford University Press, 1976.

Strauss, Leo. An Introduction to Political Philosophy. Detroit: Wayne State University Press, 1989.

________. "On the Intention of Rousseau." Social Research XIV (December 1947): 455-87.

________. Natural Right and History. Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1950.

Starobinski, Jean. Jean-Jacques Rousseau: Transparency and Obstruction. Trans Arthur Goldhammer. Chicago: The University of Chicago Press, 1988.

Taine, Hippolyte A. Les origines de la France contemporaine: L'anciene regime. Paris: Libraire Hachette, 1876.

Talmon, Jacob L. The Rise of Totalitarian Democracy. New York: Frederick A. Praeger, 1952.

Tocqueville, Alexis de. Democracy in America. Ed. J.P. Mayer, trans. George Lawrence. Garden City, New York: Anchor Books, 1969.

Vico, Giambattista. The New Science of Giambattista Vico (Scienza nuova). Trans. T.G. Bergin and M.H. Fisch. Ithaca, New York: Cornell University Press, 1948.

Wilber, Ken. Up from Eden: A Transpersonal View of Human

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Evolution. Boulder, Colorado: Shambhala Publications, Inc., 1981.

Wokler, Robert. *Rousseau*. New York: Oxford University Press, 1995.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com

Laurence Cooper was born on April 26, 1962 in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. He was awarded a Bachelor of Arts with Distinction from the University of Virginia in 1983 and a Master of Arts in Psychology from New York University in 1986. He enrolled at Duke University in 1987 as a James B. Duke Fellow. In 1991 he passed his Preliminary Examinations with Distinction and was awarded a Master of Arts in Political Science. He has taught Political Philosophy as a Visiting Lecturer at North Carolina State University and as a John H. Hallowell Instructor at Duke University, and has been appointed a post-doctoral fellow by The Symposium on Science, Reason, and Modern Democracy at Michigan State University for 1996-97. He is married and, at the time of this writing, anticipates the birth of a first child within a few weeks.

Reproduced with permission of the copyright owner. Further reproduction prohibited without permission. www.manaraa.com